# A PENALTY FUNCTION IN BINARY LOGISTIC REGRESSION 

Piyada Phrueksawatnon

A Dissertation Submitted in Partial
Fulfillment of the Requirements for the Degree of
Doctor of Philosophy (Statistics)
School of Applied Statistics
National Institute of Development Administration

# A PENAL̇TY FUNCTION IN BINARY LOGISTIC REGRESSION 

## Piyada Phrueksawatnon

## School of Applied Statistics

Professor $\square$ Yinemen Y.ithl Major Advisor (Jirawan Jitthavech, Ph.D.)

Associate Professor. $\qquad$ Co-Advisor
(Vichit Lorchirachoonkul, Ph.D.)

The Examining Committee Approved This Dissertation Submitted in Partial Fulfillment of the Requirements for the Degree of Dortor of Philosophy (Statistics).

(Supol Durongwatana, PhD.)




Assistant Professor $\qquad$
人 Dean
(Pramote Luenam, PhD.)
June 2019


#### Abstract

Title of Dissertation Author Degree Year

A Penalty Function in Binary Logistic Regression Miss Piyada Phrueksawatnon Doctor of Philosophy (Statistics) 2018


An algorithm is proposed to determine the logistic ridge parameter minimizing the MSE of the estimated parameter estimators, together with a theorem on the upperbound of the optimal logistic ridge parameter to facilitate the nonlinear optimization. A simulation is used to evaluate the relative efficiencies of the proposed estimator and other six well-known ridge estimators with respect to the maximum likelihood estimator. The simulation results confirm that the relative efficiency of the proposed estimator is highest among other well-known estimators. Finally, a real-life data set is used to repeat the evaluation and the conclusion is the same as in the simulation.

## ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

First and foremost, I offer my sincerest gratitude to my advisor Professor Dr.Jirawan Jitthavech who has supported me throughout this study and my co-advisor Associate Professor Dr.Vichit Lorchirachoonkul who has provided much assistance so that I can overcome the difficulties in my dissertation - without both of them this dissertation would not have been completed.

I am grateful to my dissertation committee members: Associate Professor Dr.Supol Durongwatana, Professor Dr.Samruam Chongcharoen, Professor Dr.Jirawan Jitthavech, and Associate Professor Dr.Vichit Lorchirachoonkul for their suggestions. I feel delighted to extend gratitude towards all of my friends, especially for whom at the Graduate School of Applied Statistics, National Institute of Development Administration (NIDA), for making my time full of happiness and energy. I gratefully acknowledge the School of Applied Statistics, NIDA for providing the facilities, and the Ministry of Science and Technology, Thailand and the University of Payao for financial support.

Finally, I would like to thank my family for their love and support; their love is always inside me.

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

## Page

ABSTRACT ..... iii
ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS ..... iv
TABLE OF CONTENTS ..... v
LIST OF TABLES ..... vii
LIST OF FIGURE ..... viii
CHAPTER 1 INTRODUCTION ..... 1
1.1 Background ..... 1
1.2 Objectives of the Study ..... 2
1.3 Scope of the Study ..... 2
1.4 Usefulness of the Study ..... 2
CHAPTER 2 LITERATURE REVIEW ..... 4
2.1 The Development of the Logistic Regression Model ..... 4
2.2 The Estimating Parameter for the Logistic Regression Model ..... 8
2.3 The Problem of Multicollinearity in Logistic Regression ..... 13
2.4 Penalized Regression ..... 15
CHAPTER 3 THE PROPOSED ESTIMATOR ..... 24
3.1 The Proposed Estimator ..... 24
3.2 The Bounds of the Ridge Parameter ..... 28
CHAPTER 4 SIMULATION STUDY ..... 47
4.1 Detail of the Simulation Study ..... 47
4.2 The Results of the Simulation Study ..... 49
4.3 A Real-Life Data Example ..... 54
CHAPTER 5 CONCLUSION AND FUTURE SEARCH ..... 59
5.1 Conclusions ..... 59
5.2 Recommendations for Future Work ..... 60

## (vi)

BIBLIOGRAPHY ..... 61
APPENDICES ..... 66
Appendix A The Results of the Simulation Study ..... 67
Appendix B Distribution of Ridge Parameter in Case of Having ..... 104
Three Explanatory Variables
Appendix C Distribution of Ridge Parameter in Case of Having ..... 140 Five Explanatory Variables
Appendix D The Lee Cancer Remission Dataset ..... 176
BIOGRAPHY ..... 178

## LIST OF TABLES

[^0]4.1 The Relative Efficiencies of $k_{o p t}, k_{H K}, k_{H K B}, k_{S R W 1}, k_{S R W 2}$, ..... 52$k_{G M}$ and $k_{W A}$ in the Case of Three Explanatory Variables
4.2 The Relative Efficiencies of $k_{\text {opt }}, k_{H K}, k_{H K B}, k_{S R W 1}, k_{S R W 2}$, ..... 53$k_{G M}$ and $k_{W A}$ in the Case of Five Explanatory Variables
4.3 The Mean and Median of $k_{u b}$ in the Case of Three ..... 54 Explanatory Variables
4.4 The Mean and Median of $k_{u b}$ in the Case of Five Explanatory ..... 54
Variables
4.5 The Correlation Matrix of the Explanatory Variables in ..... 55 the Lee Cancer Remission Dataset ( $n=27$ )
4.6 Estimates of Standardized Regression Coefficients ..... 56
(Standard Error), Ridge Parameter ( $k$ ), MSE, RE and DEV by ML and LRR Estimators
4.7 Estimates of Regression Coefficients (Standard Error) ..... 58 by ML and LRR Estimators

## LIST OF FIGURES

Figures
Page
3.1 Comparison of $\frac{k_{u b}}{c}$ in (3.35) and (3.47) as a Function of $\frac{\delta}{c}$

## CHAPTER 1

## INTRODUCTION

This chapter is organized as follows. The background on multicollinearity is introduced in Section 1.1, and the objective, scope, and usefulness of the study are presented in Sections 1.2-1.4.

### 1.1 Background

The problem of multicollinearity (near-multicollinearity in this dissertation) occurs when the explanatory variables are highly correlated. This problem is common in applied research and leads to high variance and unstable parameter estimates when estimating both ordinary least squares (OLS) in linear regression and the maximum likelihood (ML) estimator in logistic regression. Both $\mathbf{X}^{\prime} \mathbf{X}$ in linear regression and $\mathbf{X}^{\prime} \mathbf{V X}$ in logistic regression are ill-conditioned matrices that are near singularity, and they directly affect the performance of the estimator. Moreover, they result in undesirable asymptotic properties in a logistic regression such as large variances, which can cause a lack of statistical significance in the test for an individual predictor even when the overall model is strongly significant (e.g. Schaefer, 1986; Marx and Smith, 1990; Mansson and Shukur, 2011; Ogoke, Nduka and Nja, 2013).

Penalized regression methods are the most effective and popular to remedy the multicollinearity problem. The common concept of these is a tradeoff between the variances and biases of the parameter estimates whereby the penalization yields regression coefficients with lower variances but higher biases than in the unpenalized model. Ridge regression is a very popular method but offers more efficient estimates that may be biased (De Grange, Fariña and De Dios Ortúzar, 2015). Moreover, an important obstacle in ridge regression is the selection of a ridge estimator which does
not have an exact criterion, and so many researchers have proposed methods to estimate the ridge parameter.

In this dissertation, finding the optimal value of the ridge parameter without approximation is the goal, thus an extended study of the penalized function of a binary logistic regression in the presence of multicollinearity is of interest. This leads to the construction of a new estimator by applying penalization using a penalized ML estimator instead of the standard method when the data are multicollinear among the explanatory variables.

### 1.2 Objectives of the Study

In this study, a penalty function in binary logistic regression is considered with the following objectives as:

1) To propose a new estimator in binary logistic regression in present of multicollinearity
2) To investigate the properties of the proposed estimator

### 1.3 Scope of the Study

In this study, the proposed estimator is derived based on multiple logistic regression with a binary outcome in presence of the multicollinearity under the following scopes:

1) Assume that some explanatory variables have high correlation levels, while the other explanatory variables are independent or have low correlation levels.
2) The data are assumed to have no missing values

### 1.4 Usefulness of the Study

The proposed estimator can be applied in many fields such as clinical trials, medicine, biomedicine, biostatistics, health sciences, social sciences, finance, economics, engineering, and even politics for classification problems or for predicting
the probability of an interesting event. For example, in a clinical trial, logistic regression can be utilized to classify the type of cancer cells based on genetic data, while in politics, it might be used to predict whether a voter will vote for an interested political party based on personal information such as age, income, gender, abode, voting in previous elections, and so on.

## CHAPTER 2

## LITERATURE REVIEW

In this study, the area of interest is a binary logistic regression model in the presence of multicollinearity. This chapter starts with a review of the development of the binary logistic model and its assumptions (Section 2.1) followed by a review of the estimating parameter for the logistic regression model (Section 2.2). Next, a review of the problem of multicollinearity in logistic regression is provided in Section 2.3, and finally, a review of penalty regression is presented in Section 2.4

### 2.1 The Development of the Logistic Regression Model

Logistic regression is commonly used to model the probability of a binary outcome when given explanatory variables of interest: these can be either categorical or continuous. In addition to the features of the dependent variable, the difference between logistic and linear regression can both be reflected in a model and in the assumptions. This provides the conditional mean of the regression model in the range 0 and 1 for exhibiting a change in the conditional mean per unit in an explanatory variable. Hence, it is widely applied in many fields, especially in clinical trials, medicine, health sciences, etc. because a model with an S-shaped curve could be used to describe the combined effect of several risk factors on the risk of, for instance, contracting a disease. The maximum likelihood (ML) method is used to estimate parameters in the linear predictor (e.g. Hosmer and Lemeshow, 1989, 2000: 4-10). For logistic regression modeling, binary logistic regression where the response data can take one of two possible values ( 0 or 1 ) is used in the present study.

Consider the linear regression model

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{i}=\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}+\varepsilon_{i}, \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime}=\left(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{w}_{i 1}, \mathbf{w}_{i 2}, \ldots, \mathbf{w}_{i p}\right) ; \mathbf{w}_{i j}$ is a $p \times 1$ vector of the centered and scaled explanatory variables, where $w_{i j}=\frac{x_{i j}-\bar{x}_{j}}{S S_{j}^{1 / 2}} ; i=1,2, \ldots, n ; j=1,2, \ldots, p ;$ $S S_{j}=\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(x_{i j}-\bar{x}_{j}\right)^{2} ; x_{i j}$ is the observed value in unit $i$ of explanatory variable $j ;$ $\boldsymbol{\beta}=\left(\beta_{0}, \beta_{1}, \beta_{2}, \ldots, \beta_{p}\right)^{\prime}$ is a $p \times 1$ standardized regression parameter vector; $y_{i}$ is the response in unit $i$; and $\varepsilon_{i}$ is the error for unit $i, \varepsilon_{i} \sim N\left(0, \sigma^{2}\right)$.Moreover, Schaefer (1979:3) mentioned "without loss of generality".

The expectation of $y_{i}$ in (2.1) is

$$
\begin{equation*}
E\left(\mathrm{y}_{i}\right)=\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta} . \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

In the case where dependent variable $y_{i}$ is a dummy variable with only two possible values ( 0 or 1 ), the expectation of $y_{i}$ becomes

$$
\begin{align*}
E\left(y_{i}\right) & =1 \cdot P\left(y_{i}=1\right)+0 \cdot P\left(y_{i}=0\right), \\
& =P\left(y_{i}=1\right) . \tag{2.3}
\end{align*}
$$

From (2.1) and (2.3), this implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
E\left(y_{i} \mid \mathbf{w}_{i}\right)=\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}=P\left(y_{i}=1 \mid \mathbf{w}_{i}\right) . \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Equation (2.4) is called the "linear probability model" and is defined in terms of a linear predictor. The variance of $y_{i}$ can be written as

$$
\begin{align*}
\operatorname{Var}\left(y_{i}\right) & =E\left[y_{i}-E\left(y_{i}\right)\right]^{2}, \\
& =\left[1-P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\right]^{2} P\left(y_{i}=1\right)+\left[-P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\right]^{2} P\left(y_{i}=0\right), \\
& =\left[1-P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\right]^{2} P\left(y_{i}=1\right)+\left[P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\right]^{2}\left[1-P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\right], \\
& =P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\left[1-P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\right]\left[1-P\left(y_{i}=1\right)+P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\right], \\
& =P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\left[1-P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\right] . \tag{2.5}
\end{align*}
$$

Since a regression model has the important assumption of $\varepsilon_{i}$ and if a regression analysis is applied with dependent variable $y_{i}$ is a dummy variable ( 0 or 1 ), then $\varepsilon_{i}$ can be either of two values. When considering (2.1), if $y_{i}=1$, then $\varepsilon_{i}=1-\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}$ with $P\left(y_{i}=1\right)$, and if $y_{i}=0$, then $\varepsilon_{i}=-\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}$ with $P\left(y_{i}=0\right)$. Therefore,

$$
\begin{align*}
E\left(\varepsilon_{i}\right) & =\left(-\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right) P\left(y_{i}=0\right)+\left(1-\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right) P\left(y_{i}=1\right), \\
& =\left(-\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)\left[1-P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\right]+\left(1-\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right) P\left(y_{i}=1\right), \\
& =-P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\left[1-P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\right]+\left[1-P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\right] P\left(y_{i}=1\right), \\
& =0, \tag{2.6}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
\operatorname{Var}\left(\varepsilon_{i}\right) & =\left(-\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)^{2} P\left(y_{i}=0\right)+\left(1-\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)^{2} P\left(y_{i}=1\right), \\
& =\left[-P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\right]^{2}\left[1-P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\right]+\left[1-P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\right]^{2} P\left(y_{i}=1\right), \\
& =P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\left[1-P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\right]\left[P\left(y_{i}=1\right)+1-P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\right], \\
& =P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\left[1-P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\right] . \tag{2.7}
\end{align*}
$$

From (2.6) and (2.7), it can be concluded that the error has a distribution with zero mean and variance $P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\left[1-P\left(y_{i}=1\right)\right]$ in which its variance depends on the values of the explanatory variables. Thus, when assuming that $\varepsilon_{i}$ is not true, which results in the estimator, then the error assumption is not true. Therefore, when the outcome variable is dichotomous in logistic regression, the error term violates the
assumptions of homoscedasticity and normality. Using the OLS method yields an unbiased estimator, but the estimated variance of the estimator is not the smallest. Thus, the standard errors in the presence of heteroscedasticity will be incorrect and any test for significance will be invalid. Therefore, we need to fit the regression model when the dependent variable is dichotomous to find the predicted values of the response ( $\hat{\mathbf{y}}$ ) necessary using the linear probability model in (2.4). The value of $\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}$ is the probability estimate of $P\left(y_{i}=1\right)$ (i.e. $\left.P\left(y_{i}=1\right)=\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)\right)$, which is in the interval 0 and 1 $\left(0<P\left(y_{i}=1\right)=\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)<1\right)$. However, the estimate of $\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}$ might be below 0 or above 1 depending on the range of values of the explanatory variables, i.e. $-\infty<\mathbf{w}_{\boldsymbol{i}}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}<\infty$. To improve this problem, $\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)$ needs to be transformed into odds and the natural log of the odds for eliminating the ceiling of 1 and the floor of 0 . To consider the interval of probability $\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right), 0<\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)<1$ by taking the odds, we have $0<\frac{\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)}{1-\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)}<\infty$, and then by taking the natural $\log$ of the odds, $-\infty<\ln \left[\frac{\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)}{1-\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)}\right]<\infty$. Hence, we can obtain $-\infty<\ln \left[\frac{\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)}{1-\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)}\right]<\infty$ and $-\infty<\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}<\infty$.

There is a function for linking between the distribution of $\mathbf{y}$ and the linear predictor in logistic regression and is known as the "logit link":

$$
\begin{equation*}
\log i t\left(\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)\right)=\ln \left[\frac{\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)}{1-\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)}\right] \tag{2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore,

$$
\begin{align*}
\ln \left[\frac{\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)}{1-\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)}\right] & =\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta},  \tag{2.9}\\
\frac{\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)}{1-\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)} & =\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right),
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
1+\frac{\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)}{1-\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)} & =1+\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right) \\
\frac{1}{1-\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)} & =1+\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right) \\
1-\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right) & =\frac{1}{1+\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)} \\
\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right) & =\frac{\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)}{1+\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)}
\end{aligned}
$$

The equation (2.9) is called "log odds" or "logit". The logistic regression model is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
P\left(\mathrm{y}_{i}=1 \mid \mathbf{w}_{\mathbf{i}}\right)=\frac{\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)}{1+\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)}=\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right), \quad 0<\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{\mathbf{i}}\right)<1, \quad \mathrm{i}=1,2, \ldots, \mathrm{n} . \tag{2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hereinafter, the assumptions of the logistic regression model (Midi, Sarkar and Rana, 2010; Jirawan Jitthavech, 2015: 326-327) are:

1) $y_{i}$ is Bernoulli distribution, $y_{i} \in\{0,1\}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$.
2) $y_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, n$ is independent.
3) $w_{i j}, i=1,2, \ldots, n, j=1,2, \ldots, p$ are not linear combinations of each other.
4) Errors are Bernoulli distributed.
5) No important variables are omitted.
6) No extraneous variables are included.
7) The explanatory variables are measured without error.

### 2.2 The Estimating Parameter for the Logistic Regression Model

As discussed earlier, the error term has neither a normal distribution nor equal variances for the explanatory variable values, so the parameter estimates from OLS would give inefficient estimates. Instead of the OLS method, an ML estimator can be
used to estimate the regression coefficient in a logistic regression model. The objective of this estimation is to find a set value for parameter $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ that maximizes the likelihood function. In a very general sense, the ML method yields values for the unknown parameters which maximize the probability of obtaining the observed set of data (Hosmer and Lemeshow, 2000: 8). The likelihood function for Equation (2.5) can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
L\left(\boldsymbol{\beta} \mid y_{i}\right)=\prod_{i=1}^{n} \pi\left(w_{i}\right)^{y_{i}}\left[1-\pi\left(w_{i}\right)\right]^{1-y_{i}}, \quad i=1,2, \ldots, n . \tag{2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

However, for convenience in mathematical calculations, it is easier to work with the logarithm of Equation (2.11), and so the log-likelihood function can be defined as

$$
\begin{align*}
l(\boldsymbol{\beta}) & =\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left\{y_{i} \ln \pi\left(w_{i}\right)+\left(1-y_{i}\right) \ln \left[1-\pi\left(w_{i}\right)\right]\right\}, \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left\{y_{i} \ln \pi\left(w_{i}\right)+\ln \left[1-\pi\left(w_{i}\right)\right]-y_{i} \ln \left[1-\pi\left(w_{i}\right)\right]\right\}, \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left\{y_{i} \ln \left[\frac{\pi\left(w_{i}\right)}{1-\pi\left(w_{i}\right)}\right]+\ln \left[1-\pi\left(w_{i}\right)\right]\right\}, \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left\{y_{i}\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)-\ln \left[1+\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)\right]\right\} . \tag{2.12}
\end{align*}
$$

Equation (2.12) is differentiated with respect to $\beta_{0}, \beta_{1}, \ldots, \beta_{p}$, and the first derivative of (2.12) is in the form

$$
\begin{aligned}
l^{\prime}(\boldsymbol{\beta})=\frac{\partial l(\boldsymbol{\beta})}{\partial \beta_{j}} & =\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left\{y_{i} w_{i j}-\frac{\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)}{1+\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)} \cdot w_{i j}\right\}, \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{n} y_{i} w_{i j}-\sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)}{1+\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)} \cdot w_{i j}, \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{n} y_{i} w_{i j}-\sum_{i=1}^{n} \pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right) \cdot w_{i j}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
l^{\prime}(\boldsymbol{\beta})=\sum_{i=1}^{n} w_{i j}\left[y_{i}-\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)\right] . \tag{2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

This implies the matrix form

$$
\begin{equation*}
l^{\prime}(\boldsymbol{\beta})=\frac{\partial l(\boldsymbol{\beta})}{\partial \boldsymbol{\beta}}=\mathbf{W}^{\prime}[\mathbf{y}-\boldsymbol{\pi}(\mathbf{w})], \tag{2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathbf{W}=\left[\begin{array}{ccccc}
1 & w_{11} & w_{12} & \ldots & w_{1 p} \\
1 & w_{21} & w_{22} & \ldots & w_{2 p} \\
\vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \ldots & \vdots \\
1 & w_{n 1} & w_{n 1} & \ldots & w_{n p}
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{lllll}
\mathbf{1} & \mathbf{w}_{1} & \mathbf{w}_{2} & \ldots & \mathbf{w}_{n}
\end{array}\right]^{\prime}, \\
& \mathbf{y}=\left[\begin{array}{c}
y_{1} \\
y_{2} \\
\vdots \\
y_{n}
\end{array}\right], \quad \boldsymbol{\pi}\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)=\left[\begin{array}{c}
\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{1}\right) \\
\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{2}\right) \\
\vdots \\
\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{n}\right)
\end{array}\right], \quad \mathbf{V}=\operatorname{diag}\left(\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)\left(1-\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)\right)\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Moreover, to find the optimal $\boldsymbol{\beta}$, the derivative equations are set to zero, thus the likelihood score equations can be expressed as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{W}^{\prime}[\mathbf{y}-\boldsymbol{\pi}(\mathbf{w})]=\mathbf{0} . \tag{2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

The second derivative of (2.12) is in the form

$$
\begin{align*}
l^{\prime \prime}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) & =\frac{\partial^{2} l(\boldsymbol{\beta})}{\partial \beta_{j} \partial \beta_{k}} \\
& =-\sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{\partial}{\partial \beta_{k}}\left\{w_{i j}\left[y_{i}-\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)\right]\right\}, \\
& =-\sum_{i=1}^{n} w_{i j}\left\{\frac{\left[1+\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)\right] \exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right) w_{i k}-\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right) \exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right) w_{i k}}{\left[1+\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)\right]^{2}}\right\}, \\
& =-\sum_{i=1}^{n} w_{i j} w_{i k}\left\{\frac{\left[1+\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)-\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)\right] \exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)}{\left[1+\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)\right]^{2}}\right\}, \\
& =-\sum_{i=1}^{n} w_{i j} w_{i k}\left\{\frac{\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)}{\left[1+\exp \left(\mathbf{w}_{i}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)\right]^{2}}\right\}, \\
& =-\sum_{i=1}^{n} w_{i j} w_{i k}\left\{\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)\left[1-\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)\right]\right\} . \tag{2.16}
\end{align*}
$$

Equation (2.16) implies the matrix form

$$
\begin{equation*}
l^{\prime \prime}(\boldsymbol{\beta})=\frac{\partial^{2} l(\boldsymbol{\beta})}{\partial \boldsymbol{\beta} \partial \boldsymbol{\beta}^{\prime}}=-\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V} \mathbf{W}, \tag{2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

where V is a diagonal matrix with elements $v_{i}=\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)\left[1-\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)\right], i=1,2, \ldots, n$.
The most common technique for estimating parameter $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ is the ML method. From normalized Equation (2.15), the closed form of estimate $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ cannot be found, but the maximum likelihood estimate (MLE) of $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ can be obtained by using an iteratively reweighted least-squares algorithm. The value of $\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}$ at the $(\mathrm{t}+1)^{s t}$ iteration in the Newton-Raphson method (Hosmer and Lemeshow, 1989) is given by the value of $\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}$ at the $t^{\text {th }}$ iteration as

$$
\begin{align*}
\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}^{t+1} & =\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}^{t}+\left[-\left.l^{\prime \prime}(\boldsymbol{\beta})\right|_{\boldsymbol{\beta}=\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}^{t}}\right]^{-1}\left(\left.l^{\prime}(\boldsymbol{\beta})\right|_{\boldsymbol{\beta}=\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}^{t}}\right), \\
& =\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}^{t}+\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}}^{t} \mathbf{W}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime}\left[\mathbf{y}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\pi}}^{t}(\mathbf{w})\right] \\
& =\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}}^{t} \mathbf{W}\right)^{-1}\left[\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}}^{t} \mathbf{W}\right) \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}^{t}+\mathbf{W}^{\prime}\left(\mathbf{y}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\pi}}^{t}(\mathbf{w})\right)\right], \\
& =\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}}^{t} \mathbf{W}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}}^{t}\left[\mathbf{W} \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}^{t}+\left(\hat{\mathbf{V}}^{t}\right)^{-1}\left(\mathbf{y}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\pi}}^{t}(\mathbf{w})\right)\right], \tag{2.18}
\end{align*}
$$

where $t$ denotes the iteration step, $\mathbf{W}=\left[\begin{array}{lllll}\mathbf{1} & \mathbf{w}_{1} & \mathbf{w}_{2} & \ldots & \mathbf{w}_{n}\end{array}\right]^{\prime}$ is an $n \times p$ observation matrix in which the $i^{t h}$ row is $\mathbf{w}_{i}, \hat{\mathbf{V}}^{t}$ is an $n \times n$ diagonal matrix in which the diagonal element is $\hat{\boldsymbol{\pi}}^{t}(\mathbf{w})\left[1-\hat{\boldsymbol{\pi}}^{t}(\mathbf{w})\right]$, and $\hat{\boldsymbol{\pi}}^{t}(\mathbf{w})$ is an $n \times 1$ vector of the $i^{t h}$ element of the estimated $\boldsymbol{\pi}(\mathbf{w})$ value at the $t^{\text {th }}$ iteration. Obviously, $\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}^{t+1}$ in (2.18) can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}^{t+1}=\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}}^{t} \mathbf{W}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}}^{t} \hat{\mathbf{z}}^{t} \tag{2.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\hat{\mathbf{z}}^{t}=\mathbf{W} \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}^{t}+\left(\hat{\mathbf{V}}^{t}\right)^{-1}\left[\mathbf{y}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\pi}}^{t}(\mathbf{w})\right]$.
When convergence is obtained, $\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}^{t+1}$ becomes the ML estimator $\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}$ (Schaefer, 1979; Hosmer and Lemeshow, 2000; Rashid and Shifa, 2009; Okeh and Oyeka, 2013; Al Turk and Alsomahi, 2014):

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}=\lim _{t \rightarrow \infty}\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}}^{t} \mathbf{W}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}}^{t} \hat{\mathbf{z}}^{t}=\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}} \mathbf{W}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}} \hat{\mathbf{z}} . \tag{2.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

In the studies by Schaefer (1979) and Lee and Silvapulle (1988), the authors found that the category explanatory variables might result in the MLE not existing (if there is a perfect explanatory variable of the outcome). To overcome this problem, the model can be rebuilt without this category of explanatory variable, which results in the

MLE always existing. Moreover, there should be enough reason to exclude this variable in the model.

Under certain regular conditions (Cox and Hinkley, 1974; Rashid, 2008; Rashid and Shifa, 2009), as $n$ increases, $\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}$ asymptotically approaches $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ and is distributed as $\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}-\boldsymbol{\beta}\right) \sim N\left(\mathbf{0},\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}} \mathbf{W}\right)^{-1}\right)$ (Schaefer, 1979; Lee and Silvapulle, 1988; Marx, 1988; Duffy and Santner, 1989; Akay, 2014). The asymptotic mean square error (MSE) of $\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}$ is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{MSE}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right)=E\left[\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}-\boldsymbol{\beta}\right)^{\prime}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}-\boldsymbol{\beta}\right)\right]=\operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}} \mathbf{W}\right)^{-1}=\sum_{j} \frac{1}{\lambda_{j}}, \tag{2.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\lambda_{j} \geq 0, j=0,1,2, \ldots, p$, is the $j^{\text {th }}$ eigenvalue of the semi-definite matrix $\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}} \mathbf{W}$ (Schaefer, 1979; Marx, 1988; Marx and Smith, 1990).

### 2.3 The Problem of Multicollinearity in Logistic Regression

In the presence of multicollinearity, two or more explanatory variables are highly correlated, thus multicollinearity can be defined as the nearly linear dependence of the column of $\mathbf{W}$ which violates the assumption of the logistic regression (2.10). In a logistic regression model, Schaefer (1979) demonstrated that multicollinearity affects the $\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V} \mathbf{W}$ matrix in the same way as in the $\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{W}$ matrix in multiple linear regression.

Theorem 2.1: If matrix $\mathbf{W}$ is near singularity, then $\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V} \mathbf{W}$ is an ill-conditioned matrix where $\mathbf{V}$ is nonsingular.
Proof. Let $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}$ be a variance-covariance matrix of $\mathbf{Y}$ and assume that $\mathbf{u}$ is any non-zero $n \times 1$ column vector, $\mathbf{u} \in R^{n}$. By definition, $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}=E\left[(\mathbf{Y}-E[\mathbf{Y}])(\mathbf{Y}-E[\mathbf{Y}])^{\prime}\right]$, then

$$
\mathbf{u}^{\prime} \mathbf{\Sigma} \mathbf{u}=E\left[\left\{(\mathbf{Y}-E[\mathbf{Y}])^{\prime} \mathbf{u}\right\}^{\prime}\left\{(\mathbf{Y}-E[\mathbf{Y}])^{\prime} \mathbf{u}\right\}\right]=E\left[s^{2}\right] \geq 0, \quad s=(\mathbf{Y}-E[\mathbf{Y}])^{\prime} \mathbf{u} .
$$

Let $\mathbf{V}=\operatorname{diag}(\boldsymbol{\Sigma})=\operatorname{diag}\left(\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)\left(1-\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)\right)\right) ; 0<\pi\left(\mathbf{w}_{i}\right)<1$. Since $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}$ is positive definite, then $\mathbf{V}$ is positive definite as well as being nonsingular, thus it can be written as $\mathbf{V}=\mathbf{V}^{\frac{1}{2}} \mathbf{V}^{\frac{1}{2}}$. Consider $\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V} \mathbf{W}=\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}^{\frac{1}{2}} \mathbf{V}^{\frac{1}{2}} \mathbf{W}=\mathbf{L}^{\prime} \mathbf{L}$, where $\mathbf{L}=\mathbf{V}^{-\frac{1}{2}} \mathbf{W}$, and we have $r(\mathbf{W})=r(\mathbf{L})$. When two or more explanatory variables in a logistic regression model are highly correlated, we have $r(\mathbf{W})<p$, and thus $r(\mathbf{L})<p$. Hence, $\left(\mathbf{L}^{\prime} \mathbf{L}\right)^{-1}$ does not exist and $\mathbf{L}^{\prime} \mathbf{L}$ is called an ill-conditioned matrix.

Since the semi-definite matrix $\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V} \mathbf{W}$ is not full rank, there is near singularity in the W'VW matrix (Marx and Smith, 1990; Vágó and Kemény, 2006), resulting in the problem in the inverse matrix $\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V} \mathbf{W}\right)^{-1}$ because of $\operatorname{det}\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V} \mathbf{W}\right)=\prod_{j=0}^{p} \lambda_{j} \cong 0$ and $\lambda_{j} \cong 0$ for some $j$. This may induce imprecision in the MLEs since
$\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}=\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}} \mathbf{W}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}} \hat{\mathbf{z}}$. The covariance estimate of regression coefficients are inflated, leading to large standard errors which affect the confidence intervals and hypothesis testing (Hoerl and Kennard, 1970). If the degree of multicollinearity becomes more severe, there are common characteristics in the identification of multicollinearity (e.g. Schaefer, 1979; Schaefer, Roi and Wolfe, 1984; Schaefer, 1986):
i) The subsidiary or the auxiliary regression (the regression of each explanatory variable $\left(w_{i}\right)$ on the remaining explanatory variables with computing corresponding $R^{2}$ (Gujarati and Porter, 2010)), $R_{j}^{2}$, tends to one for some $j$.
ii) The sum of squared residuals from the regression model in (i) tends to zero.
iii) The smallest eigenvalue tends to zero.

If there are one or more near-linear dependences in the data, then one or more eigenvalues in $\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}} \mathbf{W}$ will be small, which means that the variance of the corresponding regression coefficient will be large. Therefore, when the degree of multicollinearity is more intense, one or more of the estimates will be unstable and the estimates may not reflect the true effect of the explanatory variables. In practice, multicollinearity inflates the estimated variances of the ML estimator and thus can cause precision problems when identifying the effects of the explanatory variables
(Schaefer, Roi and Wolfe, 1984). Ryan (1997) selected an indicator of multicollinearity in a logistic regression. If the explanatory variables are all continuous, then pairwise correlation and variance inflation factors may be used, but if some explanatory variables are not continuous, one possible check for multicollinearity in qualitative variables is the kappa measure of agreement.

### 2.4 Penalized Regression

In the presence of multicollinearity or when having a large number of predictors, the ML method often realizes unstable estimates and inaccurate variances of the logistic regression associated with parameter estimates and certain prediction regions. There are several corrections for dealing with the multicollinearity problem. Penalized regression methods are one of the most effective and popular methods to remedy the multicollinearity problem. The common concept of penalized regression is a tradeoff between the variances and biases of the parameter estimates. The penalization yields regression coefficients with lower variances than in an unpenalized model, but it gives high biases in the regression coefficients. Hence, for fitting the logistic regression, the model is penalized by adding a penalty function to its likelihood function. The penalty term provides biased penalized estimates but can also substantially reduce the variance. Moreover, depending on the form of the penalty, it allows us to carry out variable selection as well as shrinkage of the estimates (Crotty and Barker, 2014). There are two ways that penalization methods can assist as variable selection and shrinkage. The penalty criterion is in the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
l^{p}(\boldsymbol{\beta})=l(\boldsymbol{\beta})-k P(\boldsymbol{\beta}), \tag{2.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $P(\cdot)$ is a penalty function on the parameter and $k$ is penalty parameter. The estimate of $\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}$ is the maximization of Equation (2.22):

$$
\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}=\underset{\boldsymbol{\beta}}{\arg \max }\left\{l^{p}(\boldsymbol{\beta})\right\} .
$$

A proper penalty function should produce an estimator having three properties accordingly avoiding excessive bias (unbiasedness), forcing sparse solutions to reduce the model complexity (sparsity), and satisfying certain conditions to produce a continuous model (stability). These conditions imply that the penalty function must be singular at the origin and nonconvex over $(0, \infty)$ (Antoniadis and Fan, 2001). Moreover, the penalty function should be selected based on principles that can solve the optimization problem easily.

Many penalty functions have been proposed in several articles. For example, the $L_{1}$ penalty, $P(\boldsymbol{\beta})=\|\boldsymbol{\beta}\|_{1}$, results in a LASSO (least absolute shrinkage and selection operator) which can generate sparse models that are easily interpretable. However, when the explanatory variables comprise a category, the LASSO solution can exhibit an undesirable feature by selecting only dummy variables instead of whole factors (Meier, van de Geer and Bühlmann, 2008; Makalic and Schmidt, 2011). Moreover, the empirical observations indicate that if there are many high correlations between explanatory variables, the prediction performance of LASSO is dominated by ridge regression (Tibshirani, 1996). Next, the $L_{2}$ penalty (or quadratic penalty), $P(\boldsymbol{\beta})=\|\boldsymbol{\beta}\|_{2}^{2}$, yields ridge-type regression, which is nevertheless a popular method. Therefore, in this work, the focus is on ridge regression in a logistic regression model, the details of which are explained next.

### 2.4.1 Logistic Ridge Regression

Ridge regression in multiple regressions for improving the problem of multicollinearity was first proposed by Hoerl and Kennard (1970). Next, Schaefer, Roi and Wolfe (1984) derived a ridge-type estimator by applying the idea of the ridge parameter by Hoerl and Kennard (1970) in multiple linear regression to logistic regression. They defined logistic ridge regression (LRR) as an estimator that minimizes the length of the estimate of $\boldsymbol{\beta}$. The ridge logistic estimator obtained by Schaefer et al. (1984) is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}(k)=\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V W}+\boldsymbol{k} \mathbf{I}_{p}\right)^{-1}\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V} \mathbf{W}\right) \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L} . \tag{2.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

However, in Equation (2.23), $\mathbf{V}$ depends on the unknown parameter $\boldsymbol{\beta}$, so in any application, they proposed using

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}(k)=\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}} \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}_{p}\right)^{-1}\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}} \mathbf{W}\right) \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}, \tag{2.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\hat{\mathbf{V}}$ is an estimate of $\mathbf{V}$ using $\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}$ and the ridge parameter $k \geq 0$ determines the amount of shrinkage. The present work references the logistic ridge estimator of Schaefer et al. (1984) because the MSE of the estimator is of interest.

Later, Le Cessie and Houwellingen (1992) applied ridge regression to logistic regression for correcting parameter estimates and decreasing prediction errors. This method adds an $L_{2}$ penalty parameter to the likelihood function such that coefficients are shrunk individually according to the variance of each explanatory variable. By following the concept of the penalized ridge regression, the penalized log-likelihood becomes a combination of the $\log$-likelihood $l(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ in Equation (2.11) and a penalty function of $L_{2}$ norm of $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ expressed as (Duffy and Santner, 1989; Le Cessie and Van Houwelingen, 1992)

$$
\begin{equation*}
l_{L R R}(\boldsymbol{\beta})=l(\boldsymbol{\beta})-\frac{k}{2} \boldsymbol{\beta}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}, \tag{2.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $k$ is penalty parameter (called "ridge parameter").
The logistic ridge estimator can by found by maximizing Equation (2.25):

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}=\underset{\boldsymbol{\beta}}{\arg \max }\left(l(\boldsymbol{\beta})-\frac{k}{2} \boldsymbol{\beta}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right) . \tag{2.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

The first derivative of (2.25) is in the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
l_{L R R}^{\prime}(\boldsymbol{\beta})=\frac{\partial l_{L R R}(\boldsymbol{\beta})}{\partial \boldsymbol{\beta}}=\mathbf{W}^{\prime}[\mathbf{y}-\boldsymbol{\pi}(\mathbf{w})]-k \boldsymbol{\beta} . \tag{2.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

The second derivative of (2.25) is in the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
l_{L R R}^{\prime \prime}(\boldsymbol{\beta})=\frac{\partial^{2} l_{L R R}(\boldsymbol{\beta})}{\partial \boldsymbol{\beta} \partial \boldsymbol{\beta}^{\prime}}=-\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V} \mathbf{W}-k \mathbf{I}, \tag{2.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{I}$ is a $(p \times 1) \times(p \times 1)$ identity matrix.

The Newton-Raphson method is the conventional iterative method to solve (2.25) by updating the parameter vector in the Newton-Raphson step; Lee and Van Houwelingen (1992) proposed a first approximation for the ridge logistic estimator as

$$
\begin{align*}
\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}^{(1)}(k) & =\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}+\left[-\left.l_{L R R}^{\prime \prime}(\boldsymbol{\beta})\right|_{\boldsymbol{\beta}=\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}}\right]^{-1}\left(\left.l_{L R R}^{\prime}(\boldsymbol{\beta})\right|_{\boldsymbol{\beta}=\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}}\right), \\
& =\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}+\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}\right) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1}\left\{\mathbf{W}^{\prime}[\mathbf{y}-\boldsymbol{\pi}(\mathbf{w})]-k \boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}\right\}, \\
& =\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}\right) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1}\left\{\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}\right) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right) \boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}+\mathbf{W}^{\prime}[\mathbf{y}-\boldsymbol{\pi}(\mathbf{w})]-k \boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}\right\}, \\
& =\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}\right) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1}\left\{\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}\right) \mathbf{W}\right) \boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}+\mathbf{W}^{\prime}[\mathbf{y}-\boldsymbol{\pi}(\mathbf{w})]\right\}, \\
& =\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}\right) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1}\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}\right) \mathbf{W}\right)\left\{\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}+\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}\right) \mathbf{W}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime}[\mathbf{y}-\boldsymbol{\pi}(\mathbf{w})]\right\}, \\
& =\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}\right) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1}\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}\right) \mathbf{W}\right) \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}, \tag{2.29}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}=\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}+\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}\right) \mathbf{W}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime}[\mathbf{y}-\boldsymbol{\pi}(\mathbf{w})]$ with the real parameter value $\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}$ and the $\mathbf{V}$ matrix evaluated at $\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}$. Replacing $\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}\right) \mathbf{W}$ by its estimate $\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right) \mathbf{W}$ in (2.29) yields the logistic ridge estimator of Schaefer et al. (1984) in (2.24); note that if the ML estimator is infinite, this estimator does not exist (Lee and Van Houwelingen, 1992; Özkale, 2016). The logistic ridge estimator of Schaefer et al. (1984) is mentioned in the present work.

Conventionally, the parameter vector is estimated in two stages to satisfy (2.25). The first stage is to propose a closed-form estimator to approximate the logistic ridge parameter $k$ that fulfills some of the criteria to reduce the total variance of the parameter estimator. The second stage is to estimate the parameter vector $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ in
accordance with (2.26) based on the approximate value of the logistic ridge parameter $k$ in the first stage.

The MSE of the LRR estimator is derived as

$$
\begin{align*}
\operatorname{MSE}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}\right) & =E\left[\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}-\boldsymbol{\beta}\right)^{\prime}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}-\boldsymbol{\beta}\right)\right], \\
& =E\left[\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}-\boldsymbol{\beta}\right)^{\prime} \mathbf{A}^{\prime} \mathbf{A}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}-\boldsymbol{\beta}\right)\right]+\boldsymbol{\beta}^{\prime}(\mathbf{A}-\mathbf{I})^{\prime}(\mathbf{A}-\mathbf{I}) \boldsymbol{\beta}, \\
& =\sum_{j} \frac{\lambda_{j}}{\left(\lambda_{j}+k\right)^{2}}+k^{2} \boldsymbol{\beta}^{\prime}\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}} \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-2} \boldsymbol{\beta}^{\prime}, \\
& =\phi_{1}(k)+\phi_{2}(k), \tag{2.30}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\mathbf{A}=\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}} \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}} \mathbf{W}$ and $\lambda_{j}$ is the $j^{\text {th }}$ element of the eigenvalues in $\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \hat{\mathbf{V}} \mathbf{W}$, and the ridge parameter $k \geq 0$ determines the amount of shrinkage. The MSE of the LRR estimator in Equation (2.30) is established from the two important parts: $\phi_{1}(k)$ and $\phi_{2}(k)$. The total variance in (2.30), $\phi_{1}(k)$, is a continuous monotone decreasing function of $k$, while the second term in (2.30), $\phi_{2}(k)$, is the squared bias of the LRR estimator.

### 2.4.2 The Selection of Ridge Parameter

Estimating the ridge parameter is an essential problem for ridge regression, and plenty of researchers have proposed various techniques to achieve this. Nevertheless, the ridge regression method does not provide a unique estimate of the estimator to solve the multicollinearity problem since there are no definite fixed rules to select the ridge parameter. Consequently, to find the optimal value of ridge parameter $k$ without estimation is the main focus in this dissertation.

The main problem of ridge regression is to find the optimal value of ridge parameter $k$, which is of interest in this work. To achieve this, a compromise between the two ideas of fitting the model of dependent variables on the explanatory variables and shrinking the regression coefficients is sought. The ridge parameter controls the amount of shrinkage, so a larger ridge parameter is shrunk more when the sum of
squares of the coefficients is small. Thus, if $k$ approaches infinity, all estimated coefficients tend toward zero. Although it has been pointed out in a large number of studies that the value of ridge parameter $k$ varies in the interval $[0, \infty)$, ridge regression cannot improve the estimated regression coefficients for all cases. To find the value of $k$, Conniffe and Stone (1973) believed that a suitable value provides estimates of the regression coefficients that are stable with reasonable absolute values and the correct sign. More specifically, a value of $k$ is sought such that the logistic ridge estimator has a lower mean square error (MSE) than the original estimator. Since the MSE of the ridge estimator is a function of variance (the decreasing function of $k$ ) and the squared bias (the increasing function of $k$ ). Therefore, a value of $k$ must be chosen such that the variance term of the estimator is greater than the increase in the squared bias term. However, the choice of the optimum k is not well-defined.

There have been several researches that focused on different ways to examine the logistic ridge parameter in logistic regression (e.g. Schaefer et. al., 1984; Schaefer, 1986; Lee and Silvapulle, 1988; Le Cessie and Van Houwelingen, 1992; Kibria, Mansson and Shukur, 2012; Özkale and Arıcan, 2016; Asar, 2017; Asar, Arashi and $\mathrm{Wu}, 2017$ ). However, they struggled to find a closed-form solution for the optimal ridge parameter $k$ based on the data. In the past, since computers were limited when processing large amounts of data, it was necessary to approximate the value of $k$. However, nowadays, computers have much better performance and science has progressed accordingly, and so finding the closed form of $k$ has become less important. Therefore, finding the optimal real value of the ridge parameter in logistic regression can be carried out without approximating its value, which is the objective of the present study.

It can be seen that as the asymptotic variance decreases, the squared bias becomes large when $k$ increases. Therefore, the objective of logistic regression is to choose a value of $k$ such that the reduction in the variance term is greater than the increase in the squared bias. In multiple regression models, the MSE of ridge regression varies depending on the value of $k$ having the range $0<k<k_{\max }$, which affects the MSE of ridge regression less than that of OLS (Hoerl and Kennard, 1970). Several researches have mainly focused on different ways to examine the ridge parameter (e.g.

Hoerl and Kennard, 1970; Kibria, 2003; Khalaf and Shukur, 2005; Alkhamisi, Khalaf and Shukur, 2006; Muniz and Kibria, 2009; Muniz, Kibria, Mansson and Shukur, 2012). Later, Schaefer et al. (1984) first extended the ridge regression in a logistic regression and demonstrated that LRR outperforms ML when the explanatory variables are multicollinearity, which was later supported by Schaefer (1986) and Mansson and Shukur (2011).

Many studies have investigated ridge parameter $k$ under multiple linear regression models (e.g. Hoerl and Kennard, 1970; Hoerl, Kennard and Baldwin 1975; Kibria, 2003; Khalaf and Shukur, 2005; Alkhamisi, Khalaf and Shukur, 2006; Muniz et al., 2012; Dorugade, 2014).

Mansson and Shukur (2011) investigated a suitable value for ridge parameter $k$; they advised that the ridge parameter based on Kibria (2003) might be the best option when the degree of correlation between the explanatory variables is $0.75 \leq \rho<0.95$, while the ridge parameter based on Muniz and Kibria (2009) might be proper when the degree of correlation between the explanatory variables is high ( $0.95 \leq \rho<1$ ). They subsequently proposed a generalized $\mathrm{M}(\mathrm{GM})$ estimator.

However, Muniz and Kibria (2009) found that besides the ridge parameter affecting MSE, other factors influence the estimated MSE in multiple linear regressions, namely the correlation between the explanatory variables, sample size, the standard deviation of the errors, and the number of replications. When the standard deviation of the errors increases, the higher correlation between the explanatory variables brings about an increase in MSE whereas an increase in sample size causes a decrease. Later on, a number of researchers studied the determinants impacting the estimate of MSE in logistic regression models consisting of the degree of correlation between the explanatory variables, the value of the intercept, the number of observations, and the number of explanatory variables (e.g. Mansson and Shukur, 2011; Kibria et al., 2012).

In summary, six estimators of the logistic ridge parameter are compared with the proposed value of the ridge parameter

1) The HK estimator (Hoerl and Kennard, 1970)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{k}_{H K}=\frac{\hat{\sigma}^{2}}{\hat{\alpha}_{\max }^{2}} \tag{2.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

2) The HKB estimator (Hoerl et al., 1975)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{k}_{H K B}=\frac{(p+1) \hat{\sigma}^{2}}{\hat{\boldsymbol{\alpha}}^{\prime} \hat{\boldsymbol{\alpha}}} \tag{2.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

3) The SRW1 and SRW2 estimators (Schaefer et al., 1984)

$$
\begin{align*}
& \hat{k}_{S R W 1}=\frac{1}{\hat{\alpha}_{\max }^{2}}  \tag{2.33}\\
& \hat{k}_{S R W 2}=\frac{(p+1)}{\hat{\boldsymbol{\alpha}}^{\prime} \hat{\boldsymbol{\alpha}}} \tag{2.34}
\end{align*}
$$

4) The GM estimator (Kibria, 2003)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{k}_{G M}=\frac{\hat{\sigma}^{2}}{\left(\prod_{j=0}^{p} \hat{\alpha}_{j}^{2}\right)^{1 /(p+1)}} \tag{2.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

5) The WA estimator (Wu and Asar, 2016)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{k}_{W A}=\frac{(p+1)}{\sum_{j=0}^{p} \alpha_{j}^{2} /\left[1+\left(1+\lambda_{j} \alpha_{j}^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}\right]} \tag{2.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

In these equations, $\hat{\sigma}^{2}$ is the variance of the residual in the model and $\hat{\alpha}_{j}$ and $\hat{\alpha}_{\text {max }}$ are the respective $j^{\text {th }}$ and maximum elements of vector $\hat{\boldsymbol{\alpha}}=\boldsymbol{\gamma}^{\prime} \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}$, where $\gamma$ is the orthogonal transformation such that $\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V} \mathbf{W}=\boldsymbol{\gamma}^{\prime} \mathbf{\Lambda} \boldsymbol{\gamma}$ and $\boldsymbol{\Lambda}$ is the diagonal matrix of the eigenvalues of $\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V} W$ (Schaefer, 1979; Schaefer et al., 1984; Marx, 1988; Kibria et al., 2012).

## CHAPTER 3

## THE PROPOSED ESTIMATOR

In this chapter, an estimator for logistic regression in the face of multicollinearity is proposed in Section 3.1, and the bounds of the ridge parameter are derived and discussed in Section 3.2.

### 3.1 The Proposed Estimator

An iterative algorithm for determining the optimal ridge parameter $k$ is proposed using a criterion to minimize the MSEs of the estimated coefficients in the logistic regression model. In the neighborhood of convergence, the vector of the first derivatives of the penalized log-likelihood function in (2.25) with respect to $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ approaches zero. Expanding the vector of the first derivatives about the population parameter vector $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ as a Taylor Series yields a first order approximation as

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial l_{L R R}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}\right)}{\partial \boldsymbol{\beta}} & \left.\approx l_{L R R}^{\prime}(\boldsymbol{\beta})\right|_{\boldsymbol{\beta}}+\left.\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}-\boldsymbol{\beta}\right) l_{L R R}^{\prime \prime}(\boldsymbol{\beta})\right|_{\boldsymbol{\beta}}, \\
& =\left.\left\{\mathbf{W}^{\prime}[\mathbf{y}-\boldsymbol{\pi}(\mathbf{w})]-k \boldsymbol{\beta}\right\}\right|_{\beta}-\left.\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)\right|_{\boldsymbol{\beta}}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}-\boldsymbol{\beta}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\frac{\partial l_{L R R}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}\right)}{\partial \boldsymbol{\beta}} \approx\left\{\mathbf{W}^{\prime}[\mathbf{y}-\boldsymbol{\pi}(\mathbf{w})]-k \boldsymbol{\beta}\right\}\right|_{\beta}-\left.\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V} \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)\right|_{\boldsymbol{\beta}}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}-\boldsymbol{\beta}\right)=0 \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

After a few manipulations in (3.1), it can be shown that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left.\left\{\mathbf{W}^{\prime}[\mathbf{y}-\boldsymbol{\pi}(\mathbf{w})]-k \boldsymbol{\beta}\right\}\right|_{\boldsymbol{\beta}}-\left.\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V} \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)\right|_{\boldsymbol{\beta}}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}-\boldsymbol{\beta}\right) & =0, \\
\left.\mathbf{W}^{\prime}(\mathbf{y}-\boldsymbol{\pi}(\mathbf{w}))\right|_{\boldsymbol{\beta}}-k \boldsymbol{\beta}-\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}-\boldsymbol{\beta}\right) & =0, \\
\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}-\boldsymbol{\beta}\right) & =\left.\mathbf{W}^{\prime}(\mathbf{y}-\boldsymbol{\pi}(\mathbf{w}))\right|_{\boldsymbol{\beta}}+k \boldsymbol{\beta} \\
\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right) \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R} & =\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W} \boldsymbol{\beta}+\left.\mathbf{W}^{\prime}(\mathbf{y}-\boldsymbol{\pi}(\mathbf{w}))\right|_{\boldsymbol{\beta}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}=\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1}\left[\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W} \boldsymbol{\beta}+\left.\mathbf{W}^{\prime}(\mathbf{y}-\boldsymbol{\pi}(\mathbf{w}))\right|_{\boldsymbol{\beta}}\right], \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}=\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W} \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L} \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

The asymptotic bias and variance of $\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}$ in matrix form in (3.3) can be expressed as

$$
\begin{align*}
\operatorname{Bias}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}\right) & =E\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}-\boldsymbol{\beta}\right), \\
& =E\left[\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W} \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right]-\boldsymbol{\beta}, \\
& =\left[\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}\right] E\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right)-\boldsymbol{\beta}, \\
& =\left[\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}\right] \boldsymbol{\beta}-\boldsymbol{\beta}, \\
& =\left[\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}-\mathbf{I}\right] \boldsymbol{\beta}, \\
& =\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1}\left[\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}-\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)\right] \boldsymbol{\beta}, \\
& =-k\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1} \boldsymbol{\beta}, \tag{3.4}
\end{align*}
$$

And

$$
\begin{align*}
\operatorname{Var} & \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}\right) \\
& =\operatorname{Var}\left[\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W} \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right], \\
& =\left[\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}\right] \operatorname{Var}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right)\left[\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}\right]^{\prime}, \\
& =\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1}, \\
& =\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1} . \tag{3.5}
\end{align*}
$$

The scalar form of (3.5) can be written as

$$
\begin{align*}
\operatorname{Var}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}\right) & =\operatorname{tr}\left[\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1}\right], \\
& =\operatorname{tr}\left[\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-2}\right], \\
& =\sum_{j} \frac{\lambda_{j}}{\left(\lambda_{j}+k\right)^{2}} . \tag{3.6}
\end{align*}
$$

Subsequently, the asymptotic MSE of $\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}$ is given by

$$
\begin{align*}
\operatorname{MSE}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}\right) & =E\left[\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}-\boldsymbol{\beta}\right)^{\prime}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}-\boldsymbol{\beta}\right)\right], \\
& =\operatorname{tr}\left[\operatorname{Var}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}\right)\right]+\left[\operatorname{Bias}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}\right)\right]^{2}, \\
& =\sum_{j} \frac{\lambda_{j}}{\left(\lambda_{j}+k\right)^{2}}+\left[-k\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right]^{\prime}\left[-k\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-1} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right], \\
& =\sum_{j} \frac{\lambda_{j}}{\left(\lambda_{j}+k\right)^{2}}+k^{2} \boldsymbol{\beta}^{\prime}\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-2} \boldsymbol{\beta} . \tag{3.7}
\end{align*}
$$

In practice, since the parameter $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ and $\mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ are unknown, the parameters $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ and $\mathbf{V}(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ are replaced by their estimates $\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}$ and $\mathbf{V}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right)$, respectively, in (3.4) and (3.6),
and following the decomposition of the symmetric matrix $\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)$, $\operatorname{MSE}\left(k \mid \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}\right)$ becomes the approximate asymptotic MSE of $\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{\text {LRR }}$, which can be expressed as

$$
\begin{align*}
\operatorname{MSE}\left(k \mid \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right) & =\sum_{j} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{2}}+k^{2} \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}^{\prime}\left(\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right) \mathbf{W}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-2} \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}, \\
& =\frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{2}}+k^{2} \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}^{\prime}\left(\boldsymbol{\gamma} \mathbf{\Lambda} \boldsymbol{\gamma}^{\prime}+k \mathbf{I}\right)^{-2} \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}, \\
& =\sum_{j} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{2}}+k^{2} \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}^{\prime} \boldsymbol{\gamma}(\mathbf{\Lambda}+k \mathbf{I})^{-2} \gamma^{\prime} \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}, \\
& =\sum_{j} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{2}}+k^{2} \sum_{j} \frac{\alpha_{j}^{2}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{2}}, \tag{3.8}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\lambda_{M L_{j}}$ is the $j^{\text {th }}$ eigenvalue of $\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right) \mathbf{W}, \hat{\boldsymbol{\alpha}}=\boldsymbol{\gamma}^{\prime} \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}$ and $\boldsymbol{\gamma}$ and $\boldsymbol{\Lambda}$ are the eigenvector and the diagonal matrix of the eigenvalues of $\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right) \mathbf{W}$, respectively.

The minimum of (3.8) is unique since the variance is a monotonically decreasing function of $k$ and the squared bias is an monotonically increasing function of $k$. The iterative Nelder-Mead algorithm one of the popular methods in nonlinear programming (Nelder and Mead, 1965; Baeyens, Herreros and Perán, 2016) is used to search for the value minimizing $\operatorname{MSE}\left(k \mid \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right)$ in (3.8). At iteration $t+1, k^{t+1}$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
k^{t+1}=\underset{k}{\arg \min }\left[=\sum_{j} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{2}}+k^{2} \sum_{j} \frac{\alpha_{j}^{2}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{2}}\right] . \tag{3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Upon convergence, the ridge parameter $k^{t+1}$ approaches the minimizing value $k_{o p t}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
k_{o p t}=\underset{k}{\arg \min } \operatorname{MSE}\left(k \mid \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right), \tag{3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the proposed parameter $\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}\left(k_{\text {opt }}\right)$ can be derived from (3.3) as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}\left(k_{o p t}\right)=\left\{\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right) \mathbf{W}+k_{o p t} \mathbf{I}\right\}^{-1} \mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right) \mathbf{W} \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L} \tag{3.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

The maximum likelihood estimate ( $\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}$ ) is obtained using the iteratively reweighted least squares algorithm based on (2.20).

The general iterative algorithm can be summarized as follows:

1) Assume $t=0$ and $k^{t}=0$, and determine an initial LRR estimate of the population parameter vector $\boldsymbol{\beta}_{L R R}\left(k^{t}\right)=\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}$ and a termination criterion.
2) Compute the eigenvalues $\lambda_{j}^{t}$ of $\mathbf{W}^{\prime} \mathbf{V}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right) \mathbf{W}+k^{t} \mathrm{I}$.
3) Compute $k^{t+1}$ in (3.9) by using the Nelder-Mead algorithm.
4) If the termination criterion is satisfied, the $k_{\text {opt }}=k^{t+1}$, compute
$\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{L R R}\left(k_{\text {opt }}\right)$ in (3.11), and terminate the algorithm; else $t=t+1$ and go to step 2.

### 3.2 The Bounds of the Ridge Parameter

In this work, the ridge parameter $k$ is determined such that the MSE in (3.7) is minimized. Due to the high nonlinearity of $k$ in $\operatorname{MSE}\left(k \mid \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right)$, the optimum value of $k$ is obtained using an iterative algorithm. The following theorem is developed to provide an approximate upper bound of the ridge parameter for the search for $k_{\text {opt }}$.

Theorem 3.1: Let $c=p / \sum_{j} \lambda_{M L_{j}} \alpha_{j}^{2}$. If $k_{\text {opt }}=\arg \min \operatorname{MSE}\left(k \mid \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right)$, then

$$
\begin{align*}
& 0<k_{\text {opt }} \leq c\left[2+\frac{f_{2}}{2 f_{1}}\left(1-\sqrt{1+\frac{4 f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{2}^{2}}}\right)\right] \text { if } 0<\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}<2\left(2^{1 / 3}-1\right),  \tag{3.12}\\
& 0<k_{\text {opt }}<c\left(1+\frac{1}{\sqrt{1+\frac{4 f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{4}^{4}}}}\right) \text { if } 2\left(2^{1 / 3}-1\right) \leq \frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}<1.6550,  \tag{3.13}\\
& 0<k_{\text {opt }} \leq c+\sqrt{3 c \lambda_{M L_{\max }}} \text { if } \frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c} \geq 1.6550, \tag{3.14}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
& f_{1}=\frac{3 \lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{8 c}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)  \tag{3.15}\\
& f_{2}=1+\frac{3 \lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{4 c}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2},  \tag{3.16}\\
& f_{3}=2-\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3} \tag{3.17}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{4}=\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{4 c}\left[\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{2}+5\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)+8\right] . \tag{3.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. The first derivative of $\operatorname{MSE}\left(k \mid \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right)$ in (3.8) with respect to $k$ can be expressed as

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial M S E\left(k \mid \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right)}{\partial k} & =-2 \sum_{j} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{3}}+2 k \sum_{j} \frac{\alpha_{j}^{2}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{2}}-2 \mathrm{k}^{2} \sum_{j} \frac{\alpha_{j}^{2}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{3}}, \\
& =-2 \sum_{j} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{3}}+\sum_{j} \frac{\alpha_{j}^{2}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{3}}\left[2 k\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)-2 k^{2}\right], \\
& =-2 \sum_{j} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{3}}+2 k \sum_{j} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}} \alpha_{j}^{2}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{3}} . \tag{3.19}
\end{align*}
$$

From (3.19), the sufficient condition that $\operatorname{MSE}\left(k \mid \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right)$ is an increasing function of $k$ is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
k \sum_{j} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}} \alpha_{j}^{2}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{3}}>\sum_{j} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{3}} . \tag{3.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

The upper bound for the right-hand side (RHS) of (3.20) can be approximated as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{3}}<\sum_{j} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}}}{k^{3}}=\frac{p}{k^{3}} . \tag{3.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

For the left-hand side (LHS) of (3.20), the $j^{\text {th }}$ element of the diagonal matrix is

$$
\begin{aligned}
\lambda_{M L_{\max }}+k & >\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k, \text { for all } j \text { 's, } \\
\left(\lambda_{M L_{\max }}+k\right)^{3} & >\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{3}, \text { for all } j \text { 's, } \\
\frac{1}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{\max }}+k\right)^{3}} & <\frac{1}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{3}}, \text { for all } j \text { 's, }
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{\max }}+k\right)^{3}} & <\frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{3}}, \text { for all } j \text { 's } \\
\frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}} \alpha_{j}^{2}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{\max }}+k\right)^{3}} & <\frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}} \alpha_{j}^{2}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{3}}, \text { for all } j \text { 's. }
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore, the lower bound for the LHS in (3.20) can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
k \sum_{j} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}} \alpha_{j}^{2}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{\max }}+k\right)^{3}}<k \sum_{j} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}} \alpha_{j}^{2}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{3}} . \tag{3.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Subsequently, the sufficient condition in (3.20) becomes

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{p}{k^{3}} & <\frac{k}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{\max }}+k\right)^{3}} \sum_{j} \lambda_{M L_{j}} \alpha_{j}^{2}, \\
\frac{k^{4}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{\max }}+k\right)^{3}} & >\frac{p}{\sum_{j} \lambda_{M L_{j}} \alpha_{j}^{2}}=c . \tag{3.23}
\end{align*}
$$

Rearranging the inequality in (3.23) can be carried out as follows:

$$
\begin{align*}
k^{4} & >c\left(\lambda_{M L_{\max }}+k\right)^{3}, \\
k^{4 / 3} & >c^{1 / 3}\left(\lambda_{M L_{\max }}+k\right), \\
k^{4 / 3}-c^{1 / 3} k & >c^{1 / 3} \lambda_{M L_{\max }} \\
k\left(k^{1 / 3}-c^{1 / 3}\right) & >c^{1 / 3} \lambda_{M L_{\max }} \tag{3.24}
\end{align*}
$$

This implies that the necessary condition for $\operatorname{MSE}\left(k \mid \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right)$ to be an increasing function of $k$ is $k>c$. Let $k=c+\delta$, where $\delta>0$. By replacing $k$ in the terms for $c$ and $\delta$ into (3.24), we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
(c+\delta)\left[(c+\delta)^{1 / 3}-c^{1 / 3}\right]>c^{1 / 3} \lambda_{M L_{\max }} \tag{3.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Case: $0<\frac{\delta}{c}<1$. The inequality in (3.25) can be written in term of $\frac{\delta}{c}$ as

$$
\begin{align*}
(c+\delta)\left[(c+\delta)^{1 / 3}-c^{1 / 3}\right] & >c^{1 / 3} \lambda_{M L_{\max }}, \\
c\left(1+\frac{\delta}{c}\right)\left[c^{1 / 3}\left(1+\frac{\delta}{c}\right)^{1 / 3}-c^{1 / 3}\right] & >c^{1 / 3} \lambda_{M L_{\max }}, \\
\left(1+\frac{\delta}{c}\right)\left[\left(1+\frac{\delta}{c}\right)^{1 / 3}-1\right] & >\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c} . \tag{3.26}
\end{align*}
$$

Let $\frac{\delta}{c}=1-\Delta_{1}$. The condition $0<\frac{\delta}{c}<1$ results in $0<\Delta_{1}<1$. We can replace $\frac{\delta}{c}$ in terms of $\Delta_{1}$ into (3.26) as

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(1+1-\Delta_{1}\right)\left[\left(1+1-\Delta_{1}\right)^{1 / 3}-1\right] & >\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c} \\
\left(2-\Delta_{1}\right)\left[\left(2-\Delta_{1}\right)^{1 / 3}-1\right] & >\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}, \\
2\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)\left[2^{1 / 3}\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)^{1 / 3}-1\right] & >\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}, \\
{\left[2^{1 / 3}\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)^{1 / 3}-1\right] } & >\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)} \\
2\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right) & >\left[1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)}\right]^{3} \tag{3.27}
\end{align*}
$$

When considering the RHS of (3.27), its expanded form is

$$
\begin{align*}
R H S & =\left[1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)}\right]^{3}, \\
& =1+3\left[\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)}\right]+3\left[\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)}\right]^{2}+\left[\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)}\right]^{3}, \\
& =1+\frac{3}{2} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\left(\frac{1}{1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}}\right)+\frac{3}{4}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{2}\left(\frac{1}{1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}}\right)^{2}+\frac{1}{8}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{3}\left(\frac{1}{1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}}\right)^{3}, \\
& =1+\frac{3}{2} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)^{-1}+\frac{3}{4}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{2}\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)^{-2}+\frac{1}{8}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{3}\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)^{-3} . \tag{3.28}
\end{align*}
$$

Expanding the Taylor Series of $\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)^{-r}, r=1,2,3$ gives the second order of $\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)^{-1} \approx 1+\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}+\left(\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)^{2}=1+\frac{1}{2} \Delta_{1}+\frac{1}{4} \Delta_{1}^{2}  \tag{3.29}\\
& \left(1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)^{-2} \approx 1+2\left(\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)+3\left(\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)^{2}=1+\Delta_{1}+\frac{3}{4} \Delta_{1}^{2}  \tag{3.30}\\
& \left(1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)^{-3} \approx 1+3\left(\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)+6\left(\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)^{2}=1+\frac{3}{2} \Delta_{1}+\frac{3}{2} \Delta_{1}^{2} \tag{3.31}
\end{align*}
$$

Replacing (3.29), (3.30), and (3.31) in (3.28) results in

$$
\begin{aligned}
R H S= & 1+\frac{3}{2} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\left(1+\frac{1}{2} \Delta_{1}+\frac{1}{4} \Delta_{1}^{2}\right)+\frac{3}{4}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{2}\left(1+\Delta_{1}+\frac{3}{4} \Delta_{1}^{2}\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{8}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{3}\left(1+\frac{3}{2} \Delta_{1}+\frac{3}{2} \Delta_{1}^{2}\right), \\
= & 1+3\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)+3\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2}+\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3} \\
& +\left[\frac{3}{2}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)+3\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2}+\frac{3}{2}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}\right] \Delta_{1} \\
& +\left[\frac{3}{4}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)+\frac{9}{4}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2}+\frac{3}{2}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}\right] \Delta_{1}^{2}, \\
= & \left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}+\frac{3}{2}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left[1+2\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2}+\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2}\right] \Delta_{1} \\
& +\frac{3}{4}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left[1+3\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)+2\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2}\right] \Delta_{1}^{2}, \\
= & \left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}+\frac{3 \lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{4 c}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2} \Delta_{1} \\
& +\frac{3 \lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{8 c}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right) \Delta_{1}^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

The inequality in (3.27) can be expressed as

$$
\begin{aligned}
2\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{1}}{2}\right)> & \left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}+\frac{3 \lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{4 c}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2} \Delta_{1} \\
& +\frac{3 \lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{8 c}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right) \Delta_{1}^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
2-\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}> & \Delta_{1}+\frac{3 \lambda_{M L_{\max }}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2} \Delta_{1}}{} \\
& +\frac{3 \lambda_{M L_{\max }}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right) \Delta_{1}^{2}}{2-\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}>} \\
& {\left[1+\frac{3 \lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{4 c}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2}\right] \Delta_{1} } \\
& +\frac{3 \lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{8 c}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right) \Delta_{1}^{2} . \tag{3.32}
\end{align*}
$$

The inequality in (3.32) becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{1} \Delta_{1}^{2}+f_{2} \Delta_{1}<f_{3} . \tag{3.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $f_{1}, f_{2}$ and $f_{3}$ are defined in (3.15), (3.16) and (3.17) respectively.
The inequality (3.33) can be derived as

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Delta_{1}^{2}+\frac{f_{2}}{f_{1}} \Delta_{1} & <\frac{f_{3}}{f_{1}}, \\
\left(\Delta_{1}+\frac{f_{2}}{2 f_{1}}\right)^{2} & <\frac{f_{2}^{2}}{4 f_{1}^{2}}+\frac{f_{3}}{f_{1}}, \\
\Delta_{1}+\frac{f_{2}}{2 f_{1}} & <\sqrt{\frac{f_{2}^{2}}{4 f_{1}^{2}}+\frac{f_{3}}{f_{1}}}, \\
\Delta_{1} & <\sqrt{\frac{f_{2}^{2}}{4 f_{1}^{2}}+\frac{f_{3}}{f_{1}}-\frac{f_{2}}{2 f_{1}},} \\
\Delta_{1} & <\sqrt{\frac{f_{2}^{2}}{4 f_{1}^{2}}\left(1+\frac{4 f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{2}^{2}}\right)}-\frac{f_{2}}{2 f_{1}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus, the upper bound of $\Delta_{1}$ can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{1}<\frac{f_{2}}{2 f_{1}}\left(\sqrt{1+\frac{4 f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{2}^{2}}}-1\right) . \tag{3.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

A positive value for $f_{3}$ is required to fulfill the assumption that $\Delta_{1}>0$, which leads to the conditions for the inequality as follows:

$$
\begin{align*}
2-\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3} & >0 \\
\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3} & <2 \\
1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c} & <2^{1 / 3} \\
\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c} & <2\left(2^{1 / 3}-1\right) \tag{3.35}
\end{align*}
$$

From the definition of $\Delta_{1}$ and the inequality in (3.34), we can obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\delta}{c}=1-\Delta_{1}, \\
& \frac{\delta}{c}=1-\frac{f_{2}}{2 f_{1}}\left(\sqrt{1+\frac{4 f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{2}^{2}}}-1\right), \\
& \delta=c\left[1-\frac{f_{2}}{2 f_{1}}\left(\sqrt{1+\frac{4 f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{2}^{2}}}-1\right)\right] .
\end{aligned}
$$

Consequently, the upper bound of $k, k_{u b}$, to search for the optimal $k_{\text {opt }}$ is given by

$$
\begin{align*}
k_{u b} & =c+\delta, \\
& =c+c\left[1-\frac{f_{2}}{2 f_{1}}\left(\sqrt{1+\frac{4 f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{2}^{2}}}-1\right)\right], \\
& =c\left[2-\frac{f_{2}}{2 f_{1}}\left(\sqrt{1+\frac{4 f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{2}^{2}}}-1\right)\right], \\
& =c\left[2+\frac{f_{2}}{2 f_{1}}\left(1-\sqrt{1+\frac{4 f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{2}^{2}}}\right)\right] . \tag{3.36}
\end{align*}
$$

which is for $0<\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}<2\left(2^{1 / 3}-1\right)$. This is because

Case: $\frac{\delta}{c}>1$. Inequality (3.25) can be rearranged in terms of $\frac{c}{\delta}<1$ as

$$
\begin{aligned}
(c+\delta)\left[(c+\delta)^{1 / 3}-c^{1 / 3}\right] & >c^{1 / 3} \lambda_{M L_{\max }} \\
\delta\left(1+\frac{c}{\delta}\right)\left[\delta^{1 / 3}\left(1+\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{1 / 3}-c^{1 / 3}\right] & >c^{1 / 3} \lambda_{M L_{\max }} \\
\delta^{1 / 3}\left(1+\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{1 / 3}-c^{1 / 3} & >\frac{c^{1 / 3} \lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{\delta\left(1+\frac{c}{\delta}\right)} \\
\delta^{1 / 3}\left(1+\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{1 / 3} & >c^{1 / 3}+\frac{c^{1 / 3} \lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{\delta\left(1+\frac{c}{\delta}\right)} \\
\left(1+\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{1 / 3} & >\left(\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{1 / 3}\left[1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{\delta\left(1+\frac{c}{\delta}\right)}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& 1+\frac{c}{\delta}>\frac{c}{\delta}\left[1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{\delta\left(1+\frac{c}{\delta}\right)}\right]^{3},  \tag{3.37}\\
& 1+\frac{c}{\delta}>\frac{c}{\delta}\left[1+\frac{\left(\lambda_{M L_{\max }+c}^{\delta}\right.}{\delta}\right]^{3} \cdot \frac{1}{\left(1+\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{3}}  \tag{3.38}\\
& 1+\frac{c}{\delta}>\frac{c}{\delta}\left[1+\frac{c}{\delta}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}+1\right)\right]^{3} \cdot \frac{1}{\left(1+\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{3}}
\end{align*}
$$

Expanding the Taylor Series of $\left(1+\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{-3}$ to the second order of $\frac{c}{\delta}$ gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
1+\frac{c}{\delta}> & \frac{c}{\delta}\left[\begin{array}{l}
\left.1+\frac{3 c}{\delta}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)+3\left(\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{2}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{2}\right]\left[1-\frac{3 c}{\delta}+6\left(\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{2}\right], \\
+\left(\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{3}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{3}
\end{array}\right] \\
> & {\left[\begin{array}{l}
1+\frac{c}{\delta}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)+3\left(\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{2}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{2}+\left(\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{3}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{3} \\
-\frac{3 c}{\delta}-9\left(\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{2}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{2}-9\left(\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{3}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{2} \\
-3\left(\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{4}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{3}+6\left(\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{2}+18\left(\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{3}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right) \\
+18\left(\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{4}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{2}+6\left(\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{5}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{3}
\end{array}\right], }
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
1 & >\frac{c}{\delta}\left[\begin{array}{l}
\left.\frac{3 c}{\delta}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)-\frac{3 c}{\delta}-3\left(\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{2}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)\right] \\
\left.+6\left(\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{2}+3\left(\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{2}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{2}\right] \\
\end{array}>\frac{c}{\delta}\left[\frac{3 c}{\delta}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)-\frac{3 c}{\delta}\right]\right. \\
& >3\left(\frac{c}{\delta}\right)^{2}\left[1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}-1\right] \\
& >\frac{3 c \lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{\delta^{2}} \\
\delta^{2} & >3 c \lambda_{M L_{\max }} \\
\delta & >\sqrt{3 c \lambda_{M L_{\max }}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore, $\quad \delta>\sqrt{3 c \lambda_{M L_{\max }}}, \quad$ for $\frac{c}{\delta}<1$.

The upper bound of $k$ to search for the optimal $k_{\text {opt }}$ in the case of $\frac{\delta}{c} \gg 1$ is equal to

$$
\begin{equation*}
k_{u b} \approx c+\sqrt{3 c \lambda_{M L_{\max }}} . \tag{3.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that the approximation of the upper bound of $k$ in (3.34) may be invalid when $\frac{\delta}{c}$ is slightly greater than 1 . Consider the case where $\frac{c}{\delta}=1-\Delta_{2}$, in which $\Delta_{2}$ is slightly greater than zero, then $\frac{1}{\delta}=\frac{1-\Delta_{2}}{c}$. If substituting $\frac{c}{\delta}$ in terms of $\Delta_{2}$ in (3.37), we can show that

$$
\begin{align*}
1+\left(1-\Delta_{2}\right) & >c\left(\frac{1-\Delta_{2}}{c}\right)\left[1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{\left(1+1-\Delta_{2}\right)}\left(\frac{1-\Delta_{2}}{c}\right)\right]^{3} \\
2-\Delta_{2} & >\left(1-\Delta_{2}\right)\left[1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}\left(1-\Delta_{2}\right)}{c\left(2-\Delta_{2}\right)}\right]^{3} \\
2-\Delta_{2} & >\left(1-\Delta_{2}\right)\left[1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }\left(1-\Delta_{2}\right)}}{2 c\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{2}}{2}\right)}\right]^{3} \tag{3.41}
\end{align*}
$$

Considering the RHS of Inequality (3.41):

$$
\begin{aligned}
& R H S=\left(1-\Delta_{2}\right)\left[1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}\left(1-\Delta_{2}\right)}{2 c\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{2}}{2}\right)}\right]^{3}, \\
& =\left(1-\Delta_{2}\right)\left[1+3\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right) \frac{\left(1-\Delta_{2}\right)}{\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{2}}{2}\right)}+3\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2} \frac{\left(1-\Delta_{2}\right)^{2}}{\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{2}}{2}\right)^{2}}+\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3} \frac{\left(1-\Delta_{2}\right)^{3}}{\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{2}}{2}\right)^{3}}\right] .
\end{aligned}
$$

Expanding the Taylor Series of $\left(1-\frac{\Delta_{2}}{2}\right)^{-r}, r=1,2,3$, to the second order of $\Delta_{2}$ gives

$$
\begin{align*}
& R H S=\left(1-\Delta_{2}\right)\left[\begin{array}{l}
1+3\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left(1-\Delta_{2}\right)\left(1+\frac{1}{2} \Delta_{2}+\frac{1}{4} \Delta_{2}^{2}\right) \\
+3\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2}\left(1-\Delta_{2}\right)^{2}\left(1+\Delta_{2}+\frac{3}{4} \Delta_{2}^{2}\right) \\
+\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{2 c}\right)^{3}\left(1-\Delta_{2}\right)^{3}\left(1+\frac{3}{2} \Delta_{2}+\frac{3}{2} \Delta_{2}^{2}\right)
\end{array}\right], \\
& R H S=\left(1-\Delta_{2}\right)\left[\begin{array}{l}
1+3\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left(1+\frac{1}{2} \Delta_{2}+\frac{1}{4} \Delta_{2}^{2}-\Delta_{2}-\frac{1}{2} \Delta_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{4} \Delta_{2}^{3}\right) \\
+3\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2}\left(1-2 \Delta_{2}+\Delta_{2}^{2}\right)\left(1+\Delta_{2}+\frac{3}{4} \Delta_{2}^{2}\right) \\
+\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}\left(1-3 \Delta_{2}+3 \Delta_{2}^{2}-\Delta_{2}^{2}\right)\left(1+\frac{3}{2} \Delta_{2}+\frac{3}{2} \Delta_{2}^{2}\right)
\end{array}\right], \\
& =\left(1-\Delta_{2}\right)\left[\begin{array}{l}
1+3\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{2 c}\right)\left(1-\frac{1}{2} \Delta_{2}-\frac{1}{4} \Delta_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{4} \Delta_{2}^{3}\right) \\
+3\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{2 c}\right)^{2}\left(1-\Delta_{2}-\frac{1}{4} \Delta_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{2} \Delta_{2}^{3}+\frac{3}{4} \Delta_{2}^{4}\right) \\
+\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}\left(1-\frac{3}{2} \Delta_{2}-\Delta_{2}^{3}+3 \Delta_{2}^{4}-\frac{3}{2} \Delta_{2}^{5}\right)
\end{array}\right], \\
& =\left(1-\Delta_{2}\right)\left[\begin{array}{l}
1+3\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)+3\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2}+\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3} \\
+\Delta_{2}^{2}\left[-\frac{3}{2}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)-3\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2}-\frac{3}{2}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)-\frac{3}{4}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}\right] \\
\\
+\Delta_{2}^{3}\left[-\frac{3}{4}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)-\frac{3}{2}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2}-\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}\right] \\
\\
+\Delta_{2}^{4}\left[\frac{9}{4}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2}+3\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}\right]-\frac{3}{2} \Delta_{2}^{5}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}
\end{array}\right] . \tag{3.42}
\end{align*}
$$

Abandoning the higher order than the second order of $\Delta_{2}$ in (3.42) arrives at

$$
\begin{aligned}
& R H S \approx\left(1-\Delta_{2}\right) \\
&\left.\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}-\frac{3}{2}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left[1+2\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)+\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2}\right] \Delta_{2}\right] \\
&=\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left[1+\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\right] \Delta_{2}^{2} \\
&-\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}-\frac{3}{2}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2} \Delta_{2}+\frac{3}{2}\left(\frac{3}{4}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right) \Delta_{2}^{2} \Delta_{2}^{2}+\frac{3}{4}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right) \Delta_{2}^{3},\right. \\
& \approx\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}-\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2}\left[\frac{3}{2}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)+\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\right] \Delta_{2} \\
&\left.+\frac{3}{4}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left[2\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)-1\right] \Delta_{2}^{2}, \\
&=\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}-\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right) \Delta_{2} \\
&+\frac{3}{4}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right) \Delta_{2}^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore, Inequality (3.41) can be rearranged as

$$
\begin{align*}
& 2-\Delta_{2}>\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{2 c}\right)^{3}-\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{2 c}\right)^{2} \Delta_{2} \\
& +\frac{3}{8} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{c}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{2 c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{c}\right) \Delta_{2}^{2}, \\
& 2-\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}>\frac{3}{8} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right) \Delta_{2}^{2} \\
& -\left[\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{2}-1\right] \Delta_{2}, \\
& 2-\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{2 c}\right)^{3}>\frac{3}{8} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{c}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{2 c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{c}\right) \Delta_{2}^{2} \\
& -\left[\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}^{2}}{4 c^{2}}\right)-1\right] \Delta_{2}, \\
& 2-\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}>\frac{3}{8} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{c}\right) \Delta_{2}^{2} \\
& -\left[\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{c}+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{c}+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}^{2}}{c^{2}}+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}^{2}}{4 c^{2}}+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}^{3}}{4 c^{3}}\right)-1\right] \Delta_{2}, \\
& 2-\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)^{3}>\frac{3}{8} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right) \Delta_{2}^{2} \\
& -\left[\frac{2 \lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}+\frac{5}{4}\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{2}+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}^{3}}{4 c^{3}}\right] \Delta_{2}, \\
& 2-\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{2 c}\right)^{3}>\frac{3}{8} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{c}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{c}\right) \Delta_{2}^{2} \\
& -\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{4 c}\left[\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{c}\right)^{2}+5\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)+8\right] \Delta_{2} . \tag{3.43}
\end{align*}
$$

The inequality in (3.43) becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{1} \Delta_{2}^{2}-f_{4} \Delta_{2}<f_{3}, \tag{3.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $f_{1}, f_{3}$, and $f_{4}$ are defined in (3.15), (3.17), and (3.18), respectively. Inequality (3.44) can be derived as

$$
\begin{align*}
f_{1} \Delta_{2}^{2}-f_{4} \Delta_{2} & <f_{3} \\
\Delta_{2}^{2}-\frac{f_{4}}{f_{1}} \Delta_{2} & <\frac{f_{3}}{f_{1}} \\
\left(\Delta_{2}-\frac{f_{4}}{2 f_{1}}\right)^{2} & <\frac{f_{4}^{2}}{4 f_{1}^{2}}+\frac{f_{3}}{f_{1}}, \\
\left(\Delta_{2}-\frac{f_{4}}{2 f_{1}}\right)^{2} & <\frac{f_{4}^{2}}{4 f_{1}^{2}}\left(1+\frac{f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{4}^{2}}\right) \\
\Delta_{2}-\frac{f_{4}}{2 f_{1}} & < \pm \frac{f_{4}}{2 f_{1}} \sqrt{1+\frac{f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{4}^{2}}} \\
\Delta_{2} & <\frac{f_{4}}{2 f_{1}} \pm \frac{f_{4}}{2 f_{1}} \sqrt{1+\frac{f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{4}^{2}}} \\
\Delta_{2} & <\frac{f_{4}}{2 f_{1}}\left(1 \pm \sqrt{1+\frac{f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{4}^{2}}}\right) \tag{3.45}
\end{align*}
$$

From the definition of $\Delta_{2}$ and the inequality (3.45), two cases can be considered.

First, in the case where, $\Delta_{2}<\frac{f_{4}}{2 f_{1}}\left(1+\sqrt{1+\frac{f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{4}^{2}}}\right)$ and $\frac{f_{4}}{2 f_{1}}\left(1+\sqrt{1+\frac{f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{4}^{2}}}\right)>0$, these conditions are invalid.

Second, in the case where $\Delta_{2}<\frac{f_{4}}{2 f_{1}}\left(1-\sqrt{1+\frac{f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{4}^{2}}}\right)$ and $\frac{f_{4}}{2 f_{1}}\left(1-\sqrt{1+\frac{f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{4}^{2}}}\right)>0$, obviously $1+\frac{f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{4}^{2}}>0$, then $f_{3}>-\frac{f_{4}^{2}}{4 f_{1}}$. Consider

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{f_{4}}{2 f_{1}} & =\frac{\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{4 c}\left[\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{2}+5\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)+8\right]}{2 \cdot \frac{3 \lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{8 c}\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)} \\
\frac{f_{4}}{2 f_{1}} & =\frac{\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{2}+5\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)+8}{3\left(1+\frac{3 \lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{2 c}+\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}^{2}}{2 c^{2}}\right)} \\
& =\frac{2\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{2}+10\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)+16}{3\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)^{2}+9\left(\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}\right)+6}>1 .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus, it can be concluded that

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<\Delta_{2}<\frac{f_{4}}{2 f_{1}}\left(1-\sqrt{1+\frac{4 f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{4}^{2}}}\right) \tag{3.46}
\end{equation*}
$$

When $f_{3}$ approaches zero from the negative direction, $\Delta_{2}$ approaches zero from the opposite direction. On the other hand, from (3.17), $\Delta_{2}$ approaches zero when $\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\text {max }}}}{c} \rightarrow 2\left(2^{1 / 3}-1\right)$. In this case, the upper bound of $k$ to search for the optimal $k_{o p t}$ is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
k_{u b} \approx c \frac{2-\frac{f_{4}}{2 f_{1}}\left(1-\sqrt{1+\frac{4 f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{4}^{2}}}\right)}{1-\frac{f_{4}}{2 f_{1}}\left(1-\sqrt{1+\frac{4 f_{1} f_{3}}{f_{4}^{2}}}\right)} . \tag{3.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (3.35) and (3.47), we find that the upper bound in (3.47) is less than the one in (3.35) for $2\left(2^{1 / 3}-1\right)<\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}<1.6550$, which corresponds to $1<\frac{\delta}{c}<3.5719$, but is greater than one in (3.35) for $\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}>1.6550$ or $\frac{\delta}{c}>3.5719$, as shown in Figure 3.1. Therefore, $2\left(2^{1 / 3}-1\right)<\frac{\lambda_{M L_{\max }}}{c}<1.6550$, the upper bound of $k$ in (3.47), is used to search for the optimal $k_{\text {opt }}$; otherwise, the upper bound of $k$ in (3.35) is used instead.


Figure 3.1 Comparison of $\frac{k_{u b}}{c}$ in (3.35) and (3.47) as a function of $\frac{\delta}{c}$.

## CHAPTER 4

## SIMULATION STUDY

The main focus of this work is to study the effect of multicollinearity on ML and LRR estimators. Therefore, a simulation study was conducted to investigate the efficiency of the proposed ridge estimator and compare it with seven well-known ridge parameter estimators. Since $\operatorname{MSE}\left(k \mid \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}\right)$ is a function of one parameter only, the iterative Nelder-Mead (1965) algorithm was used to search for $k_{\text {opt }}$. Afterward, the capability of the proposed estimator $\left(k_{\text {opt }}\right)$ and the other ridge regression estimator were compared via their MSE. The details and results of the simulation study are contained in Sections $4.1-4.2$. Moreover, results with a real-life data example are presented in Section 4.3.

### 4.1 Details of the Simulation Study

Each explanatory variable ( $\mathbf{x}_{1}, \mathbf{x}_{2}, \mathbf{x}_{3}, \mathbf{x}_{4}, \mathbf{x}_{5}$ ) was generated for $10,000,000$ observations using a uniform distribution. The relevant explanatory variables $\mathbf{x}_{1}, \mathbf{x}_{2}, \mathbf{x}_{3}, \mathbf{x}_{4}, \mathbf{x}_{5}$ were in the form of $\mathbf{x}_{1} \sim U(10,18), \mathbf{x}_{2} \sim U(15,40), \mathbf{x}_{3} \sim U(30,50)$, $\mathbf{x}_{4} \sim U(2,6)$ and $\mathbf{x}_{5} \sim U(0.5,1.5)$. Correlated explanatory variable data was created by applying Spearman's correlation. The process of simulation was as follows:

1) Given the desired correlation matrix $\mathbf{R}^{S}$, compute the $j^{\text {th }}$ element in the adjusted correlation matrix $\mathbf{R}^{\text {adj }}$ (Hotelling and Pabst, 1936) as

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{i j}^{a d j}=2 \sin \left(\frac{\pi r_{i j}^{S}}{6}\right) \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

2) Perform the Cholesky decomposition of the adjusted correlation matrix as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{R}^{a d j}=\mathbf{L} \mathbf{L}^{\prime} \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{L}$ is a lower triangular matrix.
3) Generate correlated standard normal random numbers $\mathbf{r}_{c}$ as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{r}_{c}=\mathbf{L r} \tag{4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{r}$ comprises the standard normal random numbers.
4) Create the correlated uniform random numbers as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{u}=(\mathbf{b}-\mathbf{a}) F\left(\mathbf{r}_{c}\right)+\mathbf{a} \tag{4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{a}$ and $\mathbf{b}$ are the lower and upper bound vectors of the uniform numbers.
Thus, theoretical correlation matrices of the explanatory variables were created for two cases as follows:

First, for three explanatory variables:

$$
\mathbf{R}^{S}=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & \rho_{12} & 0 \\
\rho_{12} & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right] \text { where } \rho_{12}=0.90,0.95,0.99
$$

Second, for five explanatory variables:

$$
\mathbf{R}^{S}=\left[\begin{array}{ccccc}
1 & \rho_{12} & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
\rho_{12} & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & \rho_{34} & 0 \\
0 & 0 & \rho_{34} & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right]
$$

> where i) $\rho_{12}=0.90$ and $\rho_{34}=0.90$
> ii) $\rho_{12}=0.99$ and $\rho_{34}=0.90$,
> and $\quad$ iii) $\rho_{12}=0.99$ and $\rho_{34}=0.99$.

Samples with sample size (n) 100, 200, 500, and 1,000 were randomly selected from the population using a simple random sampling method comprising 500 replications. The explanatory variables $\mathbf{x}_{1}, \mathbf{x}_{2}, \mathbf{x}_{3}, \mathbf{x}_{4}, \mathbf{x}_{5}$ for each dataset were then standardized by using unit length scaling as $\mathbf{w}_{1}, \mathbf{w}_{2}, \mathbf{w}_{3}, \mathbf{w}_{4}, \mathbf{w}_{5}$. The parameter values of $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ were set as $\beta_{0}=0.3, \beta_{1}=2, \beta_{2}=1, \beta_{3}=-1.5 \beta_{4}=2.5$, and $\beta_{5}=-1.2$. For $\boldsymbol{\beta}$, the dependent variable $y_{i}$ was generated such that it was Bernoulli distributed with the probability in (2.8). After generating $\mathbf{X}$ and $\mathbf{y}, \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{M L}$ was computed by using the SAS 9.4 logistic regression program (PROC LOGISTIC). This method was repeated to estimate the ridge parameter for each method.

### 4.2 The Results of the Simulation Study

In this section, the results of the simulation study are presented. The estimators were compared based on the MSE criterion. The performance of the logistic ridge estimator in (3.10) was evaluated through the MSE in Equation (3.7) directly:

$$
\begin{equation*}
M S E=\sum_{j} \frac{\lambda_{M L_{j}}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{2}}+k^{2} \sum_{j} \frac{\alpha_{j}^{2}}{\left(\lambda_{M L_{j}}+k\right)^{2}} . \tag{4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, the MSE of each LRR estimator will be compared to the MSE of MLE and be presented as relative efficiency (RE):

$$
\begin{equation*}
R E=\frac{M S E(M L)}{M S E(L R R)} \times 100 . \tag{4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

In addition, the deviance was used as a goodness of fit criterion by considering the error component of the fitted logistic regression model and its aggregate statistics. It is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
D E V=\sum_{i=1}^{n} d_{i}^{2} \tag{4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the deviance residuals are $d_{i}=\sqrt{2\left|\ln \left(\pi_{i}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}})\right)\right|}$ for $y_{i}=1 \quad$ and $d_{i}=\sqrt{2\left|\ln \left(1-\pi_{i}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}})\right)\right|}$ for $y_{i}=0$ (Marx and Smith, 1990; Hosmer, Taber and Lemeshow, 1991).

The results summarized from 500 replications in each simulation cases are shown in Appendix A. The ridge parameters in Appendix A are the medians since the estimates are highly skewed to the right. The medians of seven ridge parameters in Table 4.1 and 4.2 decrease rapidly from the order of hundredths when the correlation coefficient is 0.90 to the order of thousandths when the correlation coefficient increases to 0.99 . In some simulation cases, the ridge parameters are greater than unity (see details in Appendix B and C). From the simulation results in Appendix A, it can be concluded that the relative efficiency of the proposed estimator, $k_{\text {opt }}$, with respect to the ML estimator in both cases of three and five explanatory variables is higher than other six well-known estimators in all simulation cases. The relative efficiencies of the proposed estimator, $k_{\text {opt }}$, and other six well-known estimators are summarized in Table 4.1 and 4.2 in the case of three and five explanatory variables respectively. Among the top three highest efficient estimators are $k_{o p t}, k_{S R W 1}$ and $k_{H K B}$. The ridge parameter decreases as the degree of multicollinearity increases and, as expected, the ridge parameter is rather stable when the sample size increases. It can be seen from the tables in Appendix A that the deviance of the LRR model is only slightly higher than the deviance of the ML model. The MSEs of the estimated coefficients of the correlated variables in the LRR models, except the LRR model associated with $k_{G M}$, decreases significantly from the ML case. It should be noted that the efficiency of $k_{G M}$ is lower than the ML estimator
in some simulation data sets when the multicollinearity is severe. This is the case of over penalization with the high value of ridge parameter.

The distributions of ridge parameters and $k_{u b}$ are shown in Appendix B and Appendix C. It can be seen that the distributions are very skewed to the right with, in most cases, the maximum value is much greater than unity and the median is much less than unity. The distribution of $k_{u b}$ is not skewed since the mean is approximately equal to the median in all cases as shown in Table 4.3 and 4.4. The upper-bound $k_{u b}$ increases as the sample size increases but is rather stable as the degree of multicollinearity increases.

Table 4.1 The Relative Efficiencies of $k_{\text {opt }}, k_{H K}, k_{H K B}, k_{S R W 1}, k_{S R W 2}, k_{G M}$ and $k_{W A}$ in the Case of Three Explanatory Variables

| Sample size | $\rho=0.90$ |  | $\rho=0.95$ |  | $\rho=0.99$ |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | $k_{\text {opt }}$ | RE | $k_{\text {opt }}$ | RE | $k_{\text {opt }}$ | RE |
| 100 | 0.0474 | 225.80 | 0.0240 | 252.12 | 0.0051 | 269.98 |
| 200 | 0.0684 | 253.14 | 0.0254 | 259.37 | 0.0049 | 273.26 |
| 500 | 0.0570 | 243.34 | 0.0270 | 255.50 | 0.0053 | 308.65 |
| 1000 | 0.0618 | 246.26 | 0.0240 | 252.38 | 0.0050 | 278.42 |
|  | $k_{H K}$ | RE | $k_{H K}$ | RE | $k_{H K}$ | RE |
| 100 | 0.0150 | 189.46 | 0.0096 | 216.64 | 0.0022 | 240.20 |
| 200 | 0.0196 | 211.49 | 0.0111 | 227.39 | 0.0023 | 246.06 |
| 500 | 0.0195 | 208.20 | 0.0123 | 229.65 | 0.0026 | 277.29 |
| 1000 | 0.0200 | 211.57 | 0.0110 | 225.19 | 0.0025 | 255.35 |
|  | $k_{H K B}$ | RE | $k_{\text {HKB }}$ | RE | $k_{H K B}$ | RE |
| 100 | 0.0405 | 218.28 | 0.0290 | 243.22 | 0.0083 | 256.41 |
| 200 | 0.0561 | 243.45 | 0.0346 | 247.62 | 0.0085 | 256.40 |
| 500 | 0.0542 | 232.80 | 0.0365 | 241.94 | 0.0099 | 287.87 |
| 1000 | 0.0554 | 235.17 | 0.0326 | 238.39 | 0.0093 | 256.62 |
|  | $k_{S R W 1}$ | RE | $k_{\text {SRW1 }}$ | RE | $k_{\text {SRW1 }}$ | RE |
| 100 | 0.0358 | 221.03 | 0.0217 | 249.54 | 0.0050 | 269.73 |
| 200 | 0.0438 | 245.86 | 0.0235 | 257.06 | 0.0049 | 273.03 |
| 500 | 0.0409 | 236.56 | 0.0252 | 253.52 | 0.0053 | 308.56 |
| 1000 | 0.0408 | 239.74 | 0.0225 | 249.77 | 0.0050 | 278.17 |
|  | $k_{S R W 2}$ | RE | $k_{S R W 2}$ | RE | $k_{S R W 2}$ | RE |
| 100 | 0.0943 | 185.34 | 0.0678 | 197.14 | 0.0190 | 195.83 |
| 200 | 0.1219 | 210.64 | 0.0744 | 202.28 | 0.0188 | 199.30 |
| 500 | 0.1063 | 201.28 | 0.0727 | 199.66 | 0.0198 | 248.75 |
| 1000 | 0.1117 | 202.43 | 0.0660 | 196.89 | 0.0183 | 204.02 |
|  | $k_{G M}$ | RE | $k_{G M}$ | RE | $k_{G M}$ | RE |
| 100 | 0.2329 | 108.88 | 0.1971 | 116.17 | 0.1406 | 95.91 |
| 200 | 0.2868 | 132.99 | 0.2331 | 117.13 | 0.1516 | 99.47 |
| 500 | 0.3165 | 125.05 | 0.2819 | 112.46 | 0.1632 | 192.46 |
| 1000 | 0.3136 | 126.67 | 0.2388 | 110.82 | 0.1635 | 102.36 |
|  | $k_{W A}$ | RE | $k_{W A}$ | RE | $k_{W A}$ | RE |
| 100 | 0.2449 | 125.96 | 0.1640 | 139.00 | 0.0433 | 132.03 |
| 200 | 0.3189 | 147.61 | 0.1794 | 141.48 | 0.0417 | 135.80 |
| 500 | 0.2781 | 141.35 | 0.1814 | 139.23 | 0.0446 | 214.53 |
| 1000 | 0.3125 | 142.34 | 0.1646 | 136.53 | 0.0415 | 139.32 |

Table 4.2 The Relative Efficiencies of $k_{\text {opt }}, k_{H K}, k_{H K B}, k_{S R W 1}, k_{S R W 2}, k_{G M}$ and $k_{W A}$ in the Case of Five Explanatory Variables

| Sample size | $\rho_{12}=0.90, \rho_{34}=0.90$ |  | $\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.90$ |  | $\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.99$ |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | $k_{\text {opt }}$ | RE | $k_{\text {opt }}$ | RE | $k_{\text {opt }}$ | RE |
| 100 | 0.0247 | 201.61 | 0.0052 | 247.35 | 0.0027 | 227.47 |
| 200 | 0.0322 | 211.30 | 0.0047 | 240.18 | 0.0030 | 234.79 |
| 500 | 0.0333 | 212.52 | 0.0059 | 256.07 | 0.0031 | 244.74 |
| 1000 | 0.0317 | 217.79 | 0.0053 | 246.25 | 0.0033 | 234.39 |
|  | $k_{H K}$ | $\boldsymbol{R E}$ | $k_{H K}$ | RE | $k_{H K}$ | RE |
| 100 | 0.0059 | 157.33 | 0.0016 | 209.96 | 0.0007 | 177.35 |
| 200 | 0.0085 | 165.41 | 0.0017 | 209.63 | 0.0008 | 177.29 |
| 500 | 0.0088 | 169.47 | 0.0023 | 227.31 | 0.0009 | 187.77 |
| 1000 | 0.0092 | 172.97 | 0.0021 | 217.67 | 0.0009 | 182.06 |
|  | $k_{\text {HKB }}$ | RE | $k_{\text {HKB }}$ | RE | $k_{\text {HKB }}$ | RE |
| 100 | 0.0235 | 198.61 | 0.0074 | 225.56 | 0.0033 | 224.15 |
| 200 | 0.0332 | 208.50 | 0.0082 | 214.32 | 0.0035 | 232.77 |
| 500 | 0.0372 | 209.39 | 0.0110 | 225.47 | 0.0039 | 241.69 |
| 1000 | 0.0359 | 214.97 | 0.0100 | 216.89 | 0.0042 | 230.73 |
|  | $k_{S R W 1}$ | RE | $k_{S R W 1}$ | RE | $k_{S R W 1}$ | RE |
| 100 | 0.0144 | 191.45 | 0.0041 | 244.74 | 0.0017 | 217.92 |
| 200 | 0.0188 | 199.39 | 0.0039 | 237.61 | 0.0019 | 223.67 |
| 500 | 0.0183 | 200.13 | 0.0049 | 253.50 | 0.0020 | 232.68 |
| 1000 | 0.0194 | 205.31 | 0.0045 | 243.60 | 0.0020 | 222.52 |
|  | $k_{S R W 2}$ | RE | $k_{\text {SRW } 2}$ | RE | $k_{\text {SRW2 }}$ | RE |
| 100 | 0.0578 | 170.16 | 0.0186 | 171.37 | 0.0078 | 180.14 |
| 200 | 0.0732 | 181.84 | 0.0186 | 165.37 | 0.0089 | 187.79 |
| 500 | 0.0781 | 182.74 | 0.0231 | 178.84 | 0.0093 | 197.60 |
| 1000 | 0.0753 | 187.89 | 0.0212 | 170.54 | 0.0095 | 188.46 |
|  | $k_{G M}$ | RE | $k_{G M}$ | RE | $k_{G M}$ | RE |
| 100 | 0.1756 | 106.15 | 0.1102 | 97.00 | 0.0842 | 95.88 |
| 200 | 0.2147 | 117.02 | 0.1390 | 96.74 | 0.0655 | 103.66 |
| 500 | 0.2588 | 114.72 | 0.1769 | 105.54 | 0.0971 | 110.20 |
| 1000 | 0.2350 | 120.92 | 0.1456 | 97.61 | 0.0952 | 101.06 |
|  | $k_{W A}$ | RE | $k_{W A}$ | RE | $k_{W A}$ | RE |
| 100 | 0.1533 | 118.13 | 0.0443 | 122.14 | 0.0197 | 126.26 |
| 200 | 0.1904 | 129.67 | 0.0458 | 120.35 | 0.0214 | 132.41 |
| 500 | 0.2013 | 130.65 | 0.0545 | 131.44 | 0.0227 | 141.62 |
| 1000 | 0.1953 | 132.86 | 0.0513 | 122.57 | 0.0233 | 131.96 |

Table 4.3 The Mean and Median of $k_{u b}$ in the Case of Three Explanatory Variables

| Sample | $\rho=0.90$ |  | $\rho=0.95$ |  | $\rho=0.99$ |  |
| ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| Size | mean | median | mean | median | mean | median |
| 100 | 6.8624 | 6.5188 | 6.9255 | 6.6553 | 6.9561 | 6.6929 |
| 200 | 8.8410 | 8.4438 | 8.7374 | 8.3725 | 8.6410 | 8.3298 |
| 500 | 11.7957 | 11.6883 | 11.8902 | 11.7225 | 11.7974 | 11.5859 |
| 1000 | 11.5886 | 11.6508 | 11.4886 | 11.4834 | 11.5503 | 11.5986 |

Table 4.4 The Mean and Median of $k_{u b}$ in the Case of Five Explanatory Variables

| Sample | $\rho_{12}=0.90, \rho_{34}=0.90$ |  | $\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.90$ |  | $\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.99$ |  |
| ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| Size | mean | median | mean | median | mean | median |
| 100 | 7.0166 | 6.8764 | 6.9464 | 6.7896 | 7.1101 | 6.9007 |
| 200 | 9.2462 | 9.0394 | 9.2953 | 9.0181 | 7.1033 | 7.0632 |
| 500 | 12.8172 | 12.6166 | 12.9257 | 12.7355 | 9.1942 | 9.1594 |
| 1000 | 12.2826 | 12.2581 | 12.2817 | 12.3705 | 10.5164 | 10.5190 |

### 4.3 A Real-Life Data Example

The Lee cancer remission dataset (Lee, 1974; Marx, 1988) taken from SAS, the SUGI Supplementary Guide (Hastings, 1986), was used to demonstrate the efficacy of $k_{\text {opt }}$. The binary response was 1 if a patient went into complete cancer remission and 0 otherwise. The explanatory variables are cell of the marrow clot section (CELL), smear differential percentage of blasts (SMEAR), percentage of absolute marrow leukemia cell infiltrate (INFIL), percentage labeling index of the bone marrow leukemia cells (LI), and the maximum temperature ahead of treatment (TEMP). There were 27 patients in this study. Before applying the LRR technique, the explanatory variables were centered and scaled by using a unit length scaling method. The correlation matrix between the explanatory variables is reported in Table 4.5. Noticeably, SMEAR and INFIL are highly correlated, while CELL and INFIL are moderately correlated, which implies multicollinearity.

Table 4.5 The Correlation Matrix of the Explanatory Variables in the Lee Cancer Remission Dataset ( $n=27$ ).

|  | Correlation Matrix of the Explanatory Variables |  |  |  |  |
| :--- | :---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
|  | CELL | SMEAR | INFIL | LI | TEMP |
| CELL | 1.0000 | 0.2918 | 0.6071 | 0.1902 | 0.1082 |
| SMEAR |  | 1.0000 | 0.9297 | 0.3175 | -0.1125 |
| INFIL |  |  | 1.0000 | 0.3211 | -0.0445 |
| LI |  |  |  | 1.0000 | -0.0548 |
| TEMP |  |  |  |  | 1.0000 |

The model corresponding to these standardized variables is
$\log i t\left(\hat{\pi}\left(\mathbf{x}_{i}\right)\right)=\hat{\beta}_{0}+\hat{\beta}_{1} C E L L_{i}+\hat{\beta}_{2} \operatorname{SMEAR}_{i}+\hat{\beta}_{3}$ INFIL $_{i}+\hat{\beta}_{4} L I_{i}+\hat{\beta}_{5} T E M P_{i}, \quad i=1,2, \ldots, n$.

Estimates of the standardized regression coefficients and standard error (in parentheses), ridge parameter, MSE, relative error (RE), and deviance (DEV) by the ML and LRR estimators are reported in Table 4.5, in which CELL, SMEAR, and INFIL are obviously highly correlated. The standard errors are based, in part, on the correlation between the variables in the model, and it is evident that those of the estimated regression coefficients of CELL, SMEAR, and INFIL (corresponding to $\hat{\beta}_{1}, \hat{\beta}_{2}$, and $\hat{\beta}_{3}$, respectively) were explicitly inflated by the ML estimator for Model (4.8) due to the multicollinearity problem. Next, the standardized regression coefficients in Table 4.6 were converted back into the original units of data, as reported in Table 4.7.

Table 4.6 Estimates of Standardized Regression Coefficients (Standard Error), Ridge Parameter ( $k$ ), MSE, RE and DEV by the ML and LRR estimators.

| Variable | Method |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
|  | ML | $k_{\text {opt }}$ | $k_{H K}$ | $k_{H K B}$ | $k_{S R W 1}$ | $k_{S R W 2}$ | $k_{G M}$ | $k_{W A}$ |
| Constant | -2.3111 | -1.7855 | -2.0011 | -1.7972 | -1.7882 | -1.5098 | -1.0071 | -1.2802 |
|  | $(1.8001)$ | $(1.0565)$ | $(1.2319)$ | $(1.0621)$ | $(1.0578)$ | $(0.9312)$ | $(0.7163)$ | $(0.8279)$ |
| CELL | 23.0121 | 8.5009 | 13.7348 | 8.7021 | 8.5463 | 5.8148 | 2.8942 | 4.3921 |
|  | $(44.975)$ | $(7.7147)$ | $(19.6764)$ | $(8.0339)$ | $(7.7849)$ | $(5.2077)$ | $(3.2967)$ | $(4.3109)$ |
| SMEAR | 20.0497 | 0.7390 | 7.4003 | 0.9551 | 0.7871 | -0.7988 | -0.4977 | -0.7402 |
|  | $(61.3591)$ | $(7.2466)$ | $(25.854)$ | $(7.8438)$ | $(7.3793)$ | $(2.8289)$ | $(2.0315)$ | $(2.3497)$ |
| INFIL | -22.3814 | 0.1783 | -7.5863 | -0.0712 | 0.1229 | 1.8532 | 1.2099 | 1.6580 |
|  | $(71.7846)$ | $(8.3556)$ | $(30.2193)$ | $(9.0643)$ | $(8.5133)$ | $(2.9498)$ | $(1.876)$ | $(2.2955)$ |
| LI | 9.5107 | 8.8752 | 9.2313 | 8.9057 | 8.8824 | 7.8773 | 5.6784 | 6.9103 |
|  | $(4.536)$ | $(4.264)$ | $(4.3991)$ | $(4.277)$ | $(4.2671)$ | $(3.811)$ | $(2.8411)$ | $(3.3765)$ |
| TEMP | -6.5271 | -6.0361 | -6.3496 | -6.0663 | -6.0433 | -5.0097 | -2.8163 | -4.0230 |
|  | $(4.9092)$ | $(4.7173)$ | $(4.8512)$ | $(4.7318)$ | $(4.7208)$ | $(4.199)$ | $(3.0594)$ | $(3.6936)$ |
|  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| k | 0 | 0.00074 | 0.00013 | 0.00067 | 0.00072 | 0.00382 | 0.01682 | 0.00814 |
| MSE | $10,988.64$ | $1,316.74$ | $2,478.38$ | $1,318.01$ | $1,316.80$ | $1,400.18$ | $1,450.10$ | $1,426.02$ |
| RE |  | 834.53 | 443.38 | 833.73 | 834.50 | 784.80 | 757.78 | 770.58 |
| DEV | 21.7550 | 21.8746 | 21.8002 | 21.8702 | 21.8736 | 22.0482 | 23.2243 | 22.3968 |

In the experiment, the value of the ridge parameter was in the range $0.0001<k<0.017$. The ridge method was effective in significantly reducing the MSE of the ML estimator, and the size of the regression coefficients shrank depending on the value of $k$. The estimated regression coefficients due to the LRR methods were smaller than those of the ML estimator, especially those of the explanatory variables with multicollinearity (i.e. CELL, SMEAR and INFIL corresponding to $\hat{\beta}_{L R R, 1}$, $\hat{\beta}_{L R R, 2}$ and $\hat{\beta}_{L R R, 3}$ respectively), and the regression coefficient sign of INFIL differed from the ML estimator. The proposed estimator, $k_{\text {opt }}$, produced the lowest MSE. Interestingly, $k_{\text {opt }}$ and $k_{S R W 1}$ realized quite similar MSE and $k$ values. The deviances of the methods were not very different.

Marx and Smith (1990) recommended a formula to convert the standardized regression coefficients to the original unit (uncentered and unscaled regression coefficients):

$$
\begin{equation*}
b_{j}=q_{j}^{-1} \hat{\beta}_{L R R, j}, \quad j=1,2, \ldots, p \tag{4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
b_{0}=\hat{\beta}_{L R R, 0}-\sum_{j} q_{j}^{-1} \bar{x}_{j} \hat{\beta}_{L R R, j}, \quad j=1,2, \ldots, p, \tag{4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $q_{j}=\sqrt{\sum_{i}\left(x_{i j}-\bar{x}_{j}\right)^{2}}$.
The standard errors associated with the uncentered and unscaled LRR estimators are defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
S E\left(b_{j}\right)=q_{j}^{-1} S E\left(\hat{\beta}_{L R R, j}\right), \quad j=1,2, \ldots, p, \tag{4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
\operatorname{SE}\left(b_{0}\right)= & \left\{\operatorname{Var}\left(\hat{\beta}_{L R R, 0}\right)+\sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(q_{j}^{-1} \bar{x}_{j}\right)^{2} \operatorname{Var}\left(\hat{\beta}_{L R R, j}\right)\right. \\
& +2 \sum_{i<j} \sum_{j \neq 0} q_{i}^{-1} q_{j}^{-1} \bar{x}_{i} \bar{x}_{j} \operatorname{Cov}\left(\hat{\beta}_{L R R, i}, \hat{\beta}_{L R R, j}\right) \\
& \left.-2 \sum_{j=1}^{p} q_{j}^{-1} \bar{x}_{j} \operatorname{Cov}\left(\hat{\beta}_{L R R, 0}, \hat{\beta}_{L R R, j}\right)\right\}^{1 / 2} . \tag{4.12}
\end{align*}
$$

The estimates of regression coefficients and standard error with the ML and LRR estimators are summarized in Table 4.7.

The estimates of standardized and unstandardized regression coefficients of each method in Table 4.6 and Table 4.7 are the same except for the constant term. When comparing the estimates of regression coefficients with the ML and LRR estimators in Table 4.7, it was found that $b_{3}$ with $k_{H K}$ and $k_{H K B}$ was similar to ML but the original negative estimate changed positive with $k_{\text {opt }}$ and $k_{S R W 1}$. Similarly, the original positive estimate of $b_{2}$ changed to negative with $k_{S R W 2}, k_{G M}$, and $k_{W A}$. Therefore, in practice, the appropriate methods are $k_{\text {opt }}$ and $k_{S R W 1}$, which also provided values of $k$
and MSE that were identical. In addition, when comparing the prediction percentage with both methods, the results were the same.

Table 4.7 Estimates of Regression Coefficients (Standard Error) by ML and LRR Estimators.

| Variable | Method |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
|  | ML | $k_{\text {opt }}$ | $k_{H K}$ | $k_{H K B}$ | $k_{S R W 1}$ | $k_{S R W 2}$ | $k_{G M}$ | $k_{W A}$ |
| Constant | 57.1285 | 65.5110 | 64.2034 | 65.6879 | 65.5553 | 55.2955 | 30.6967 | 44.3251 |
|  | $(69.9768)$ | $(57.7647)$ | $(61.0266)$ | $(57.9488)$ | $(57.8079)$ | $(51.9808)$ | $(39.1675)$ | $(46.3809)$ |
|  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| CELL | 24.1799 | 8.9323 | 14.4318 | 9.1437 | 8.9800 | 6.1099 | 3.0411 | 4.6149 |
|  | $(47.2573)$ | $(8.1062)$ | $(20.6749)$ | $(8.4415)$ | $(8.18)$ | $(5.472)$ | $(3.4639)$ | $(4.5297)$ |
|  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| SMEAR | 18.3697 | 0.6771 | 6.7802 | 0.8751 | 0.7211 | -0.7319 | -0.4560 | -0.6782 |
|  | $(56.2177)$ | $(6.6394)$ | $(23.6877)$ | $(7.1865)$ | $(6.761)$ | $(2.5919)$ | $(1.8612)$ | $(2.1528)$ |
|  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| INFIL | -18.4763 | 0.1472 | -6.2627 | -0.0588 | 0.1014 | 1.5298 | 0.9988 | 1.3687 |
|  | $(59.2597)$ | $(6.8977)$ | $(24.9467)$ | $(7.4828)$ | $(7.0279)$ | $(2.4352)$ | $(1.5486)$ | $(1.895)$ |
|  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| LI | 3.9872 | 3.7208 | 3.8701 | 3.7336 | 3.7238 | 3.3024 | 2.3806 | 2.8970 |
|  | $(1.9017)$ | $(1.7876)$ | $(1.8442)$ | $(1.7931)$ | $(1.7889)$ | $(1.5977)$ | $(1.1911)$ | $(1.4156)$ |
| TEMP | -86.1371 | -79.6578 | -83.7940 | -80.0551 | -79.7520 | -66.1124 | -37.1658 | -53.0908 |
|  | $(64.7854)$ | $(62.2538)$ | $(64.0202)$ | $(62.4449)$ | $(62.2993)$ | $(55.4136)$ | $(40.3742)$ | $(48.7443)$ |

As illustrated clearly in the real-life example, the LRR approach is a good alternative to the ML estimator when faced with the multicollinearity problem. Choosing an appropriate LRR estimator depends on the purpose of the user and the processing capabilities of the computer used. The optimal LRR method proposed in this study searches for an efficient LRR parameter whereas the others use methods to estimate the unknown LRR parameter for the dataset.

## CHAPTER 5

## CONCLUSIONS AND FUTURE RESEARCH

This dissertation presents a solution to solve the problem of determining the optimal ridge parameter in logistic regression by using one of the efficient searches for finding the optimal of a non-linear performance measure. A theorem on the upperbound of the ridge parameter based on the eigenvalues of the explanatory variables is developed to facilitate the numerical search. The following are the conclusions of the study in section 5.1 and recommendations for future work in section 5.2.

### 5.1 Conclusions

This dissertation demonstrates that it is quite convenient to compute the optimal ridge parameter, instead of the conventional approximations of ridge parameter, due to the ubiquity of powerful computing capability. A theorem on the upper-bound of the optimal ridge parameter estimator, $k_{\text {opt }}$, is developed by following the eigen approach such that $k_{\text {opt }}$ which minimizes the MSE of the estimates of the coefficients in the LRR model can be searched effectively in a specified small interval as shown in Table 4.3 and 4.4. A simulation is used to evaluate the relative efficiencies of the proposed $k_{\text {opt }}$ and other six well-known ridge parameter estimators, $k_{H K}, k_{H K B}, k_{S W 1}, k_{S W 2}, k_{G M}$ and $k_{W A}$ with respect to the ML estimator. The simulation results show that the relative efficiency of the proposed $k_{\text {opt }}$ is highest among the compared well-known estimators $k_{H K B}$ and $k_{S R W 1}$ are good alternatives as shown in Table 4.1 and 4.2. Also, the simulation result suggests that the ridge parameter in some cases may be greater than unity. Additionally, using a real-life data set of small size, comparisons with the same
six estimators show that the relative efficiency of the estimator with the optimal ridge parameter is also better than or equal to others.

### 5.2 Recommendations for Future Work

The effectiveness of direct search could be improved further by decreasing the upper-bound $k_{u b}$ with a better approximation than the first order approximation as in the proof of theorem. Other better direct search than the iterative Nelder-Mead Algorithm should be investigated. Furthermore, the concept of direct search should be extended to solve the ill-conditioned information matrix in other statistical estimation.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

Akay, K. U. 2014. A Graphical Evaluation of Logistic Ridge Estimator in Mixture Experiments. Journal of Applied Statistics. 41 (6): 1217 - 1232.

Al Turk, L. I. and Alsomahi, A. A. 2014. On Enhancing the Dorugade and Kashid's Ridge Parameter in Ridge Regression. Applied Mathematical Sciences. 8 (152): $7553-7565$.

Alkhamisi, M., Khalaf, G. and Shukur, G. 2006. Some Modifications for Choosing Ridge Parameters. Communications in Statistics - Theory and Methods. 35 (11): 2005-2020.
Allison, P. D. 2000. Logistic Regression Using SAS: Theory and Application. Cary, NC: SAS Institute.

Antoniadis, A. and Fan, J. 2001. Regularization of Wavelets Approximations. Journal of the American Statistical Association. 96 (455): 939 - 967.

Asar, Y. 2017. Some New Methods to Solve Multicollinearity in Logistic Regression. Communications in Statistics - Simulation and Computation. 46 (4): 2576-2586.

Asar, Y.; Arashi, M. and Wu, J. 2017. Restricted Ridge Estimator in the Logistic Regression Model. Communications in Statistics - Simulation and Computation. 46 (8): $1-7$.

Baeyens, E.; Herreros, A. and Perán, J. R. 2016. A Direct Search Algorithm for Global Optimization. Algorithms. 9 (2): 40.

Conniffe, D. and Stone, J. 1973. A Critical View of Ridge Regression. Journal of the Royal Statistical Society Series D (The Statistician). 22 (3): 181-187.

Cox, D. R. and Hinkley, D. V. 1974. Theoretical Statistics. London: Chapman and Hall.

Crotty, M. and Barker, C. 2014. Penalizing Your Models: An Overview of the Generalized Regression Platform. Cary, NC: SAS Institute.

De Grange, L.; Fariña, P. and De Dios Ortúzar, J. 2015. Dealing with Collinearity in Travel Time Valuation. Transportmetrica A: Transport Science. 11 (4): 317 - 332.

Dorugade, A. V. 2014. New Ridge Parameters for Ridge Regression. Journal of the Association of Arab Universities for Basic and Applied Sciences. 15: 94-99.

Duffy, D. E. and Santner, T. J. 1989. On the Small Sample Properties of NormRestricted ML Estimators for Logistic Regression Models. Communications in Statistics - Theory and Methods. 18 (3): 959-980.

Gujarati, D. N. and Porter, D. C. 2010. Essentials of Econometrics. $4^{\text {th }}$ ed. Singapore: The McGraw - Hill.

Hastings, R. P. 1986. SUGI Supplemental Library User's Guide. Cary, NC: SAS Institute.

Hoerl, A. E. and Kennard, R. W. 1970A. Ridge Regression: Applications to Nonorthogonal Problems. Technometrics. 12 (1): 69-82.

Hoerl, A. E. and Kennard, R. W. 1970B. Ridge Regression: Biased Estimation for Nonorthogonal Problems. Technometrics. 12 (1): 55-67.

Hoerl, A. E.; Kannard, R. W. and Baldwin, K. F. 1975. Ridge Regression: Some Simulations. Communications in Statistics - Theory and Methods. 4 (2): $105-123$.

Hosmer, D. and Lemeshow, S. 1989. Applied Logistic Regression. New York: John Wiley \& Sons.

Hosmer, D. W. and Lemeshow, S. 2000. Applied Logistic Regression. $2^{\text {nd }}$ ed. New York: John Wiley \& Sons.
Hosmer, D. W.; Taber, S. and Lemeshow, S. 1991. The Importance of Assessing the Fit of Logistic Regression Models: A Case Study. American Journal of Public Health. 81 (12): 1630 - 1635.

Hotelling, H. and Pabst, M. R. 1936. Rank Correlation and Tests of Significance Involving No Assumptions of Normality. Annals of Mathematical Statistics. 7: 29-43.

Jirawan Jitthavech. 2015. Regression Analysis. Bangkok: WVO Office of Printing Mill. [In Thai]

Khalaf, G. and Shukur, G. 2005. Choosing Ridge Parameter for Regression Problems. Communications in Statistics - Theory and Methods. 34 (5): 1177 - 1182.

Kibria, B. G. 2003. Performance of Some New Ridge Regression Estimators. Communications in Statistics - Simulation and Computation. 32 (2): 419-435.

Kibria, B. M. G.; Månsson, K. and Shukur, G. 2012. Performance of Some Logistic Ridge Regression Estimators. Computational Economics. 40 (4): 401-414.

Le Cessie, S. and Van Houwelingen, J. C. 1992. Ridge Estimators in Logistic Regression. Applied statistics. 41 (1): 191-201.

Lee, A. H. and Silvapulle, M. J. 1988. Ridge Estimation in Logistic Regression. Communications in Statistics - Simulation and Computation. 17 (4): 1231-1257.

Lee, E. T. 1974. A Computer Program for Linear Logistic Regression Analysis. Computer Programs in Biomedicine. 4 (2): 80 - 92.

Makalic, E. and Schmidt, D. F. 2011. Review of Modern Logistic Regression Methods with Application to Small and Medium Sample Size Problems. In AI 2010: Advances in Artificial Intelligence. Li J., ed. Berlin: Springer. Pp. 213-222.

Mansson, K. and Shukur, G. 2011. On Ridge Parameters in Logistic Regression. Communications in Statistics - Theory and Methods. 40 (18): 3366-3381.

Marx, B. D. 1988. Ill-Conditioned Information Matrices and Generalized Linear Model: An Asymptotically Biased Estimation Approach. Doctoral dissertation, Virginia Polytechnic Institute and State University, USA.

Marx, B. D. and Smith, E. P. 1990. Weighted Multicollinearity in Logistic Regression: Diagnostics and Biased Estimation Techniques with an Example from Lake Acidification. Canadian Journal of Fisheries and Aquatic Sciences. 47 (6): 1128-1135.

Meier, L.; Van De Geer, S. and Bühlmann, P. 2008. The Group Lasso for Logistic Regression. Journal of the Royal Statistical Society: Series B (Statistical Methodology). 70 (1): 53-71.

Midi, H.; Sarkar, S. K. and Rana, S. 2010. Collinearity Diagnostics of Binary Logistic Regression Model. Journal of Interdisciplinary Mathematics. 13 (3): 253 - 267.

Muniz, G. and Kibria, B. G. 2009. On Some Ridge Regression Estimators: An Empirical Comparison. Communications in Statistics - Simulation and Computation. 38 (3): 621-630.

Muniz, G. B. M.; Kibria, G.; Mansson, K. and Shukur, G. 2012. On Developing Ridge Regression Parameters: A Graphical Investigation. Statistics and Operations Research Transactions. 36 (2): 115-138.

Nelder, J. A. and Mead, R. 1965. A Simplex Method for Function Minimization. The Computer Journal. 7: 308-313.

Okeh, U. M. and Oyeka, I. C. A. 2013. Estimating the Fisher's Scoring Matrix Formula from Logistic Model. American Journal of Theoretical and Applied Statistics. 2 (6): 221 - 227.

Özkale, M. R. 2016. Iterative Algorithms of Biased Estimation Methods in Binary Logistic Regression. Statistical Papers. 57 (4): 991 - 1016.

Özkale, M. R. and Arıcan, E. 2016. A New Biased Estimator in Logistic Regression Model. Statistics. 50 (2): 233 - 253.

Özkale, M. R.; Lemeshow, S. and Sturdivant, R. 2017. Logistic Regression Diagnostics in Ridge Regression. Computational Statistics. 1-31.

Rashid, M. 2008. Inference on Logistic Regression Model. Doctoral dissertation, Bowling Green State University, USA.

Rashid, M. and Shifa, N. 2009. Consistency of the Maximum Likelihood Estimator in Logistic Regression Model: A Different Approach. Journal of Statistics. 16 (1): 1-11.

Ryan, T. P. 1997. Modern Regression Methods. New York: John Wiley \& Sons.
Schaefer, R. L. 1979. Multicollinearity and Logistic Regression. Doctoral dissertation, the University of Michigan, USA.

Schaefer, R. L. 1986. Alternative Estimators in Logistic Regression When the Data are Collinear. Journal of Statistical Computation and Simulation. 25 (1-2): $75-91$.

Schaefer, R. L.; Roi, L. D. and Wolfe, R. A. 1984. A Ridge Logistic Estimator. Communications in Statistics - Theory and Methods. 13 (1): 99-113.

Tibshirani, R. 1996. Regression Shrinkage and Selection via the Lasso. Journal of the Royal Statistical Society. Series B (Methodological). 58 (1): 267-288.

Vágó, E. and Kemény, S. 2006. Logistic Ridge Regression for Clinical Data Analysis (A Case Study). Applied Ecology and Environmental Research. 4 (2): 171 - 179.

Wu, J., and Asar, Y. 2016. On Almost Unbiased Ridge Logistic Estimator for the Logistic Regression Model. Hacettepe Journal of Mathematics and Statistics. 45 (3): 989 - 998.

APPENDICES

## Appendix A

## The Results of the Simulation Study

The results of the simulation study are presented in two parts. First, in case of three explanatory variables, the ridge parameter $k$ and the estimators at each correlation level are reported in Appendix A.1. The median of ridge parameter $k$, the estimated standardized regression coefficients, the squared bias, variance, MSE, and deviance of the estimated coefficients are reported in Tables A.1.1 to Tables A.1.12. Second, in case of five explanatory variables, the ridge parameter $k$ and the estimators at each correlation level are presented in Appendix A.2. The medians of the ridge parameter $k$, the estimated standard regression coefficients, the absolute bias, MSE, RE and deviance of the estimators are summarized in Tables A.2.1 - A.2.12.

## A. 1 The Results of the Simulation Study in case of Three Explanatory Variables

The effect of varying the correlation level and sample size on the performance of the ML and LRR estimators are presented.

Table A.1.1 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho=0.90$ and $n=100$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a Coef. }}$ | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.2919 | 0.0000 | 0.0440 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.9193 | 0.0000 | 23.6342 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.7548 | 0.0000 | 23.5304 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.8411 | 0.0000 | 4.5733 |  |
|  | DEV $=129.8437$ | Total | 0.0000 | 51.7819 | 100.00 |
| KOPT | constant | 0.2838 | 0.0082 | 0.0436 |  |
| $k=0.0474$ | $w_{1}$ | 2.2681 | 1.9455 | 9.9337 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8174 | 1.8468 | 9.6290 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.4494 | 0.5226 | 3.3266 |  |
|  | DEV $=130.2447$ | Total | 4.3231 | 22.9328 | 225.80 |
| HK | constant | 0.2887 | 0.0032 | 0.0439 |  |
| $k=0.0150$ | $w_{1}$ | 2.6274 | 1.1348 | 11.7771 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8470 | 1.1040 | 11.6535 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.6941 | 0.2068 | 3.8571 |  |
|  | DEV $=129.9360$ | Total | 2.4489 | 27.3315 | 189.46 |
| HKB | constant | 0.2850 | 0.0070 | 0.0438 |  |
| $k=0.0405$ | $w_{1}$ | 2.2894 | 2.0525 | 10.2913 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9458 | 1.9803 | 10.0413 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.5296 | 0.4265 | 3.3464 |  |
|  | DEV=130.1691 | Total | 4.4662 | 23.7227 | 218.28 |
| SRW1 | constant | 0.2858 | 0.0063 | 0.0438 |  |
| $k=0.0358$ | $w_{1}$ | 2.3793 | 1.8077 | 10.0728 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8912 | 1.7424 | 9.8589 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.5494 | 0.3949 | 3.4522 |  |
|  | DEV=130.1047 | Total | 3.9512 | 23.4275 | 221.03 |
| SRW2 | constant | 0.2799 | 0.0123 | 0.0435 |  |
| $k=0.0943$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.8881 | 2.8660 | 12.7305 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9667 | 2.7290 | 12.1257 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2790 | 0.7389 | 3.0388 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=130.6210$ | Total | 6.3462 | 27.9386 | 185.34 |
| GM | constant | 0.2726 | 0.0197 | 0.0430 |  |
| $k=0.2329$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.2275 | 3.8805 | 22.9882 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9441 | 3.6589 | 21.1044 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.8625 | 1.2219 | 3.4236 |  |
|  | DEV=131.8539 | Total | 8.7811 | 47.5592 | 108.88 |
| WA | constant | 0.2709 | 0.0214 | 0.0431 |  |
| $k=0.2449$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.3047 | 3.7233 | 19.6195 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8647 | 3.4908 | 18.0261 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.8762 | 1.2267 | 3.4210 |  |
|  | DEV $=131.6744$ | Total | 8.4622 | 41.1096 | 125.96 |

Note: $k_{u b}=6.5188$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; aestimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.1.2 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho=0.90$ and $n=200$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a }}$ Coef. | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.2832 | 0.0000 | 0.0211 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.4273 | 0.0000 | 22.3219 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.7909 | 0.0000 | 22.2898 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.4765 | 0.0000 | 4.2925 |  |
|  | DEV $=267.3959$ | Total | 0.0000 | 48.9253 | 100.00 |
| KOPT | constant | 0.2788 | 0.0044 | 0.0209 |  |
| $k=0.0684$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.8019 | 1.7928 | 8.2990 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8494 | 1.7578 | 8.1161 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.1340 | 0.5005 | 2.8914 |  |
|  | DEV=267.8046 | Total | 4.0555 | 19.3273 | 253.14 |
| HK | constant | 0.2816 | 0.0016 | 0.0210 |  |
| $k=0.0196$ | $w_{1}$ | 2.1311 | 1.1081 | 9.8597 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8898 | 1.0879 | 9.7911 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.3407 | 0.2058 | 3.4615 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=267.4962$ | Total | 2.4035 | 23.1334 | 211.49 |
| HKB | constant | 0.2797 | 0.0036 | 0.0210 |  |
| $k=0.0561$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.8326 | 1.9255 | 8.6796 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9535 | 1.8885 | 8.4774 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.1926 | 0.4191 | 2.9189 |  |
|  | DEV $=267.7363$ | Total | 4.2366 | 20.0969 | 243.45 |
| SRW1 | constant | 0.2802 | 0.0030 | 0.0210 |  |
| $k=0.0438$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.9092 | 1.6614 | 8.4961 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9347 | 1.6234 | 8.3179 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2257 | 0.3678 | 3.0644 |  |
|  | DEV $=267.6492$ | Total | 3.6556 | 19.8993 | 245.86 |
|  | constant | 0.2772 | 0.0061 | 0.0208 |  |
| $k=0.1219$ | $w_{1}$ | $1.5201$ | $2.5649$ | $10.5613$ |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9434 | 2.4838 | 10.0160 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.9977 | 0.6839 | 2.6291 |  |
|  | DEV=268.1331 | Total | 5.7386 | 23.2273 | 210.64 |
| GM | constant | 0.2727 | 0.0106 | 0.0207 |  |
| $k=0.2868$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.0852 | 3.4027 | 17.8811 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8525 | 3.2014 | 16.0686 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.7047 | 1.0706 | 2.8194 |  |
|  | DEV=269.1092 | Total | 7.6853 | 36.7899 | 132.99 |
| WA | constant | 0.2722 | 0.0111 | 0.0207 |  |
| $k=0.3189$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.0629 | 3.2884 | 15.8358 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.7908 | 3.1083 | 14.3530 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.6696 | 1.1144 | 2.9354 |  |
|  | DEV=269.1005 | Total | 7.5222 | 33.1449 | 147.61 |

Note: $k_{u b}=8.4438$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; aestimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.1.3 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho=0.90$ and $n=500$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a Coef. }}$ | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.2350 | 0.0000 | 0.0082 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.1443 | 0.0000 | 21.6145 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0165 | 0.0000 | 21.6150 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.6124 | 0.0000 | 4.1397 |  |
|  | DEV $=680.7005$ | Total | 0.0000 | 47.3775 | 100.00 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { KOPT } \\ & k=0.0570 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2336 | 0.0014 | 0.0082 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.6513 | 1.7853 | 8.3273 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9965 | 1.7581 | 8.2532 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2469 | 0.4727 | 2.8805 |  |
|  | DEV=681.1003 | Total | 4.0175 | 19.4693 | 243.34 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{HK} \\ & k=0.0195 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2345 | 0.0006 | 0.0082 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.9020 | 1.1452 | 9.6941 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0786 | 1.1368 | 9.6763 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.4648 | 0.1958 | 3.3770 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=680.8064$ | Total | 2.4783 | 22.7557 | 208.20 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{HKB} \\ & k=0.0542 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2338 | 0.0012 | 0.0082 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.6411 | 2.0081 | 8.7982 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1121 | 1.9832 | 8.7062 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.3032 | 0.4078 | 2.8370 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=681.0678$ | Total | 4.4002 | 20.3495 | 232.80 |
| SRW1$k=0.0409$ | constant | 0.2340 | 0.0010 | 0.0082 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.7605 | 1.6525 | 8.5112 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0743 | 1.6372 | 8.4712 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.3556 | 0.3350 | 3.0372 |  |
|  | DEV $=680.9469$ | Total | 3.6257 | 20.0279 | 236.56 |
| SRW2$k=0.1063$ | constant | 0.2330 | 0.0020 | 0.0082 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.4218 | 2.5878 | 10.5677 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0526 | 2.5469 | 10.3879 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.1169 | 0.6421 | 2.5741 |  |
|  | DEV=681.4344 | Total | 5.7787 | 23.5379 | 201.28 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { GM } \\ & k=0.3165 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2313 | 0.0037 | 0.0081 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 0.9995 | 3.4539 | 17.9786 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9068 | 3.3738 | 17.3252 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.7904 | 1.0600 | 2.5738 |  |
|  | DEV $=682.4427$ | Total | 7.8913 | 37.8858 | 125.05 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { WA } \\ & k=0.2781 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2314 | 0.0036 | 0.0081 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.0267 | 3.3026 | 15.5631 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8516 | 3.2288 | 15.1251 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.7615 | 1.0733 | 2.8215 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=682.3935$ | Total | 7.6083 | 33.5178 | 141.35 |

Note: $k_{u b}=11.6883$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; a ${ }^{\text {a }}$ stimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.1.4 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho=0.90$ and $n=1000$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a }}$ Coef. | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.2715 | 0.0000 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.0590 | 0.0000 | 21.4991 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9502 | 0.0000 | 21.4967 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.5177 | 0.0000 | 4.1199 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=1362.7780$ | Total | 0.0000 | 47.1198 | 100.00 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { KOPT } \\ & k=0.0618 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2707 | 0.0008 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.6413 | 1.7386 | 8.1334 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8536 | 1.7220 | 8.1226 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.1680 | 0.4899 | 2.8738 |  |
|  | DEV=1363.1779 | Total | 3.9514 | 19.1338 | 246.26 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{HK} \\ & k=0.0200 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2712 | 0.0003 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.8672 | 1.1187 | 9.4706 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9483 | 1.1084 | 9.4677 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.3746 | 0.2102 | 3.3295 |  |
|  | DEV=1362.8857 | Total | 2.4376 | 22.2719 | 211.57 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { HKB } \\ & k=0.0554 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2708 | 0.0007 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.6369 | 1.9839 | 8.6315 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9539 | 1.9613 | 8.5877 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2170 | 0.4245 | 2.8135 |  |
|  | DEV=1363.1543 | Total | 4.3704 | 20.0369 | 235.17 |
| SRW1$k=0.0408$ | constant | 0.2710 | 0.0006 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.7286 | 1.6178 | $8.3315$ |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9391 | 1.6034 | 8.3161 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2690 | 0.3554 | 3.0029 |  |
|  | DEV=1363.0308 | Total | 3.5771 | 19.6545 | 239.74 |
| SRW2$k=0.1117$ | constant | 0.2704 | 0.0011 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.4114 | 2.5484 | 10.4009 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9124 | 2.5195 | 10.2873 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.0402 | 0.6594 | 2.5853 |  |
|  | DEV=1363.5214 | Total | 5.7284 | 23.2774 | 202.43 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { GM } \\ & k=0.3136 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2694 | 0.0021 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 0.9836 | 3.3814 | 17.6298 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8510 | 3.3224 | 17.0132 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.7653 | 1.0371 | 2.5518 |  |
|  | DEV=1364.4292 | Total | 7.7430 | 37.1990 | 126.67 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { WA } \\ & k=0.3125 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2694 | 0.0021 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.0035 | 3.2318 | 15.2991 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.7641 | 3.2041 | 14.9278 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.7096 | 1.0826 | 2.8728 |  |
|  | DEV $=1364.4444$ | Total | 7.5206 | 33.1038 | 142.34 |

Note: $k_{u b}=11.6507$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; a ${ }^{\text {a }}$ stimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.1.5 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho=0.95$ and $n=100$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a }}$ Coef. | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.2992 | 0.0000 | 0.0439 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.3046 | 0.0000 | 45.7270 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.2920 | 0.0000 | 45.7353 |  |
|  | w3 | -1.9021 | 0.0000 | 4.5569 |  |
|  | DEV=130.0871 | Total | 0.0000 | $96.0632$ | 100.00 |
| KOPT | constant | 0.2921 | 0.0073 | 0.0435 |  |
| $k=0.0240$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.8282 | 2.6069 | 17.3223 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.2980 | 2.5942 | 17.2437 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.5690 | 0.4083 | 3.4933 |  |
|  | DEV $=130.4239$ | Total | 5.6168 | 38.1027 | 252.12 |
| HK | constant | 0.2964 | 0.0029 | 0.0438 |  |
| $k=0.0096$ | $w_{1}$ | 2.0721 | 1.6429 | 20.1705 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.3682 | 1.6406 | 20.1523 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.7717 | 0.1637 | 3.9763 |  |
|  | DEV=130.1756 | Total | 3.4500 | 44.3430 | 216.64 |
| HKB | constant | 0.2930 | 0.0064 | 0.0437 |  |
| $k=0.0290$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.8385 | 2.9378 | 18.0282 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.3984 | 2.9256 | 17.9183 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.6168 | 0.3528 | 3.5057 |  |
|  | DEV=130.3993 | Total | 6.2227 | 39.4957 | 243.22 |
| SRW1 | constant | 0.2938 | 0.0055 | 0.0437 |  |
| $k=0.0217$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.9097 | 2.5199 | 17.4384 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.3689 | 2.5163 | 17.3843 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.6466 | 0.3144 | 3.6300 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=130.3218$ | Total | 5.3562 | 38.4963 | 249.54 |
|  | constant | 0.2884 | 0.0110 | 0.0435 |  |
| $k=0.0678$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.5918 | 3.9123 | $22.8760$ |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.3260 | 3.8828 | 22.6310 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.3906 | 0.6187 | 3.1771 |  |
|  | DEV $=130.7836$ | Total | 8.4248 | 48.7275 | 197.14 |
|  |  | 0.2803 | 0.0194 | 0.0428 |  |
| $k=0.1971$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.1372 | 5.1654 | 39.8641 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0648 | 5.0817 | 39.4491 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.9360 | 1.1299 | 3.3354 |  |
|  | DEV $=131.9489$ | Total | 11.3965 | 82.6912 | 116.17 |
| WA | constant | 0.2808 | 0.0189 | 0.0431 |  |
| $k=0.1640$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.2333 | 4.8139 | 33.1328 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1114 | 4.7519 | 32.5870 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.0281 | 1.0351 | 3.3479 |  |
|  | DEV $=131.6260$ | Total | 10.6198 | 69.1109 | 139.00 |

Note: $k_{u b}=6.6553$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; aestimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.1.6 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho=0.95$ and $n=200$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a }}$ Coef. | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.2915 | 0.0000 | 0.0211 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.2700 | 0.0000 | 43.6179 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1057 | 0.0000 | 43.6069 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.3964 | 0.0000 | 4.2942 |  |
|  | DEV=267.1187 | Total | 0.0000 | 91.5402 | 100.00 |
| KOPT | constant | 0.2879 | 0.0036 | 0.0210 |  |
| $k=0.0254$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.8163 | 2.4876 | 16.0464 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1177 | 2.4845 | 16.0244 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.1336 | 0.3948 | 3.2010 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=267.4550$ | Total | 5.3705 | 35.2927 | 259.37 |
| HK | constant | 0.2901 | 0.0014 | 0.0211 |  |
| $k=0.0111$ | $w_{1}$ | 2.0586 | 1.6407 | 18.2886 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1653 | 1.6336 | 18.2643 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2920 | 0.1662 | 3.6825 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=267.2138$ | Total | 3.4419 | 40.2565 | 227.39 |
| HKB | constant | 0.2884 | 0.0031 | 0.0210 |  |
| $k=0.0346$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.7831 | 2.8961 | 16.8926 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.2566 | 2.8859 | 16.8336 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.1734 | 0.3400 | 3.2211 |  |
|  | DEV $=267.4468$ | Total | 6.1251 | 36.9683 | 247.62 |
|  | constant | 0.2889 | 0.0026 | 0.0210 |  |
| $k=0.0235$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.8916 | 2.4199 | 16.1372 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1879 | 2.4084 | 16.0977 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2008 | 0.2989 | 3.3552 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=267.3540$ | Total | 5.1297 | 35.6111 | 257.06 |
|  | constant | 0.2863 | 0.0052 | 0.0210 |  |
| $k=0.0744$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.5398 | 3.7417 | 21.2421 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.2243 | 3.7277 | 21.0957 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.0144 | 0.5629 | 2.8960 |  |
|  | DEV $=267.7978$ | Total | 8.0376 | 45.2547 | 202.28 |
| GM | constant | 0.2820 | 0.0095 | 0.0208 |  |
| $k=0.2331$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.1655 | 4.9622 | 38.2977 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0744 | 4.8936 | 37.3076 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.7368 | 0.9346 | 2.5295 |  |
|  | DEV $=268.6905$ | Total | 10.7999 | 78.1556 | 117.13 |
| WA | constant | 0.2824 | 0.0091 | 0.0209 |  |
| $k=0.1794$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.1943 | 4.6176 | 31.1223 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0517 | 4.5824 | 30.6715 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.7473 | 0.9232 | 2.8851 |  |
|  | DEV $=268.5816$ | Total | 10.1324 | 64.6998 | 141.48 |

Note: $k_{u b}=8.3725$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; aestimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.1.7 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho=0.95$ and $n=500$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a Coef. }}$ | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.2329 | 0.0000 | 0.0082 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.0678 | 0.0000 | 42.1896 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9015 | 0.0000 | 42.1846 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.4649 | 0.0000 | 4.1399 |  |
|  | DEV $=680.8537$ | Total | 0.0000 | 88.5223 | 100.00 |
| KOPT | constant | 0.2318 | 0.0012 | 0.0082 |  |
| $k=0.0270$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.7286 | 2.4820 | 15.7689 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8737 | 2.4748 | 15.7370 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2172 | 0.3718 | 3.1332 |  |
|  | DEV $=681.1758$ | Total | 5.3298 | 34.6472 | 255.50 |
| HK | constant | 0.2324 | 0.0005 | 0.0082 |  |
| $k=0.0123$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.9086 | 1.7021 | 17.5102 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9225 | 1.6984 | 17.4903 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.3532 | 0.1671 | 3.5372 |  |
|  | DEV=680.9583 | Total | 3.5681 | 38.5459 | 229.65 |
| HKB | constant | 0.2319 | 0.0011 | 0.0082 |  |
| $k=0.0365$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.6958 | 2.9731 | 16.7647 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9644 | 2.9659 | 16.7280 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2291 | 0.3501 | 3.0879 |  |
|  | DEV=681.2088 | Total | 6.2902 | 36.5888 | 241.94 |
| SRW1 | constant | 0.2321 | 0.0008 | 0.0082 |  |
| $k=0.0252$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.7890 | 2.4091 | 15.8389 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9325 | 2.4026 | 15.8058 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2740 | 0.2854 | 3.2649 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=681.0857$ | Total | 5.0979 | 34.9178 | 253.52 |
|  | constant | 0.2312 | 0.0017 | 0.0082 |  |
| $k=0.0727$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.4910 | 3.7410 | $20.7899$ |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9585 | 3.7293 | 20.7097 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.0893 | 0.5548 | 2.8289 |  |
|  | DEV $=681.5247$ | Total | 8.0269 | 44.3367 | 199.66 |
|  | constant | 0.2295 | 0.0035 | 0.0081 |  |
| $k=0.2819$ | $w_{1}$ | 0.9980 | 5.0314 | 38.3214 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9110 | 4.9991 | 37.7953 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.7434 | 1.0402 | 2.5887 |  |
|  | DEV $=682.5349$ | Total | 11.0742 | 78.7135 | 112.46 |
| WA | constant | 0.2299 | 0.0030 | 0.0082 |  |
| $k=0.1814$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.1311 | 4.6280 | 30.4658 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8762 | 4.6014 | 30.2426 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.8234 | 0.9307 | 2.8653 |  |
|  | DEV $=682.2807$ | Total | 10.1631 | 63.5820 | 139.23 |

Note: $k_{u b}=11.7225$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; a estimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.1.8 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho=0.95$ and $n=1000$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a }}$ Coef. | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.2721 | 0.0000 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.9599 | 0.0000 | 42.0866 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0420 | 0.0000 | 42.0860 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.3999 | 0.0000 | 4.1223 |  |
|  | DEV $=1362.3482$ | Total | 0.0000 | 88.2990 | 100.00 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { KOPT } \\ & k=0.0240 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2714 | 0.0007 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.5570 | 2.4818 | 15.9734 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0828 | 2.4569 | 15.8706 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.1586 | 0.3445 | 3.1382 |  |
|  | DEV=1362.6743 | Total | 5.2838 | 34.9861 | 252.38 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{HK} \\ & k=0.0110 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2718 | 0.0003 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.7390 | 1.6819 | 17.8410 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1326 | 1.6787 | 17.8176 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2987 | 0.1463 | 3.5483 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=1362.4494$ | Total | 3.5072 | 39.2110 | 225.19 |
| HKB$k=0.0326$ | constant | 0.2715 | 0.0006 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.5413 | 2.9869 | 17.0178 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1638 | 2.9692 | 16.9245 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.1838 | 0.3148 | 3.0937 |  |
|  | DEV=1362.6996 | Total | 6.2715 | 37.0402 | 238.39 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { SRW1 } \\ & k=0.0225 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2716 | 0.0005 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.6303 | 2.4010 | 16.0598 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1363 | 2.3909 | 16.0111 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2227 | 0.2529 | 3.2776 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=1362.5748$ | Total | 5.0453 | 35.3527 | 249.77 |
| SRW2$k=0.0660$ | constant | 0.2711 | 0.0010 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.3795 | 3.7648 | 21.0940 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1165 | 3.7330 | 20.9254 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.0491 | 0.5087 | 2.8226 |  |
|  | DEV $=1363.0144$ | Total | 8.0075 | 44.8461 | 196.89 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { GM } \\ & k=0.2388 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2700 | 0.0021 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 0.9897 | 5.0666 | 38.7957 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9863 | 5.0159 | 38.3293 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.7591 | 0.9596 | 2.5467 |  |
|  | DEV=1364.0212 | Total | 11.0442 | 79.6758 | 110.82 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { WA } \\ & k=0.1646 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2703 | 0.0018 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.0829 | 4.6849 | 31.0396 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9566 | 4.6284 | 30.7351 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.7846 | 0.8845 | 2.8969 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=1363.8115$ | Total | 10.1996 | 64.6756 | 136.53 |

Note: $k_{u b}=11.4834$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; a ${ }^{\text {a }}$ stimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.1.9 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho=0.99$ and $n=100$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a Coef. }}$ | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.3081 | 0.0000 | 0.0439 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.6117 | 0.0000 | 230.0279 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.7746 | 0.0000 | 229.8651 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.8810 | 0.0000 | 4.5715 |  |
|  | DEV=130.0404 | Total | 0.0000 | 464.5084 | 100.00 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { KOPT } \\ & k=0.0051 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3027 | 0.0055 | 0.0437 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.2206 | 5.5303 | 84.0022 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9006 | 5.5849 | 84.1294 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.6678 | 0.2716 | 3.8782 |  |
|  | DEV=130.2898 | Total | 11.3924 | 172.0535 | 269.98 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{HK} \\ & k=0.0022 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3060 | 0.0021 | 0.0439 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.4420 | 3.6742 | 94.5846 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8579 | 3.6886 | 94.5330 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.7964 | 0.1145 | 4.2234 |  |
|  | DEV=130.1182 | Total | 7.4794 | 193.3847 | 240.20 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{HKB} \\ & k=0.0083 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3034 | 0.0048 | 0.0437 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.1652 | 6.7060 | 88.5993 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0195 | 6.7358 | 88.5903 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.6894 | 0.2468 | 3.9217 |  |
|  | DEV=130.3243 | Total | 13.6935 | 181.1550 | 256.41 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { SRW1 } \\ & k=0.0050 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3043 | 0.0039 | 0.0438 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.2635 | 5.5205 | 84.0735 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9479 | 5.5487 | 84.0834 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.7192 | 0.2090 | 4.0124 |  |
|  | DEV=130.2328 | Total | 11.2821 | 172.2131 | 269.73 |
| SRW2$k=0.0190$ | constant | 0.3003 | 0.0079 | 0.0437 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.8992 | 8.7525 | 116.7375 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1088 | 8.8046 | 116.7391 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.5461 | 0.4137 | 3.6772 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=130.6162$ | Total | 17.9787 | 237.1975 | 195.83 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { GM } \\ & k=0.1406 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2913 | 0.0171 | 0.0433 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.1996 | 12.1051 | 241.3894 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1574 | 12.1282 | 239.7083 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.0500 | 0.9738 | 3.1864 |  |
|  | DEV=131.7032 | Total | 25.2243 | 484.3275 | 95.91 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { WA } \\ & k=0.0433 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2957 | 0.0127 | 0.0435 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.5397 | 10.6652 | 174.1364 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1610 | 10.7497 | 174.0410 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.3240 | 0.6647 | 3.5999 |  |
|  | DEV=131.1708 | Total | 22.0923 | 351.8207 | 132.03 |

Note: $k_{u b}=6.6929$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; aestimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.1.10 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho=0.99$ and $n=200$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a }}$ Coef. | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.2868 | 0.0000 | 0.0211 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.1554 | 0.0000 | 218.3029 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1403 | 0.0000 | 218.2959 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.6564 | 0.0000 | 4.3001 |  |
|  | DEV=267.0747 | Total | 0.0000 | 440.9201 | 100.00 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { KOPT } \\ & k=0.0049 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2843 | 0.0026 | 0.0210 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.0320 | 5.4607 | 78.7929 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0341 | 5.4857 | 78.8755 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.5132 | 0.2300 | 3.6678 |  |
|  | DEV=267.3185 | Total | 11.1790 | 161.3573 | 273.26 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{HK} \\ & k=0.0023 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2858 | 0.0010 | 0.0211 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.1797 | 3.7206 | 87.5826 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0422 | 3.7309 | 87.6117 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.5955 | 0.0957 | 3.9777 |  |
|  | DEV=267.1576 | Total | 7.5483 | 179.1931 | 246.06 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { HKB } \\ & k=0.0085 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2845 | 0.0023 | 0.0211 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.9692 | 6.7624 | 84.0956 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1502 | 6.7822 | 84.1608 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.5194 | 0.2066 | 3.6900 |  |
|  | DEV=267.3735 | Total | 13.7535 | 171.9675 | 256.40 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { SRW1 } \\ & k=0.0049 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2850 | 0.0018 | 0.0211 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.0745 | 5.4367 | 78.8007 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0777 | 5.4563 | 78.8715 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.5441 | 0.1699 | 3.7985 |  |
|  | DEV=267.2666 | Total | 11.0647 | 161.4917 | 273.03 |
| SRW2$k=0.0188$ | constant | 0.2831 | 0.0038 | 0.0210 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.7797 | 8.6044 | 108.8197 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1939 | 8.6400 | 108.9367 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.4173 | 0.3430 | 3.4599 |  |
|  | DEV=267.6407 | Total | 17.5912 | 221.2373 | 199.30 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { GM } \\ & k=0.1516 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2786 | 0.0082 | 0.0209 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.2061 | 11.8468 | 220.5848 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.2004 | 11.8829 | 220.0011 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.0137 | 0.8223 | 2.6725 |  |
|  | DEV=268.6075 | Total | 24.5603 | 443.2794 | 99.47 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { WA } \\ & k=0.0417 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2807 | 0.0062 | 0.0210 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.4911 | 10.4655 | 160.5676 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.2110 | 10.5333 | 160.7669 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2401 | 0.5649 | 3.3289 |  |
|  | DEV=268.1691 | Total | 21.5699 | 324.6844 | 135.80 |

Note: $k_{u b}=8.3298$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; a estimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.1.11 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho=0.99$ and $n=500$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a Coef. }}$ | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.2338 | 0.0000 | 0.0082 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.1460 | 0.0000 | 208.7358 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0567 | 0.0000 | 208.7251 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.6437 | 0.0000 | 4.1409 |  |
|  | DEV $=680.7125$ | Total | 0.0000 | 421.6100 | 100.00 |
| KOPT | constant | 0.2333 | 0.0005 | 0.0082 |  |
| $k=0.0053$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.7353 | 6.2579 | 66.4014 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.3925 | 6.2453 | 66.3074 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.5740 | 0.1032 | 3.8826 |  |
|  | DEV $=680.9225$ | Total | 12.6069 | 136.5995 | 308.65 |
| HK | constant | 0.2335 | 0.0003 | 0.0082 |  |
| $k=0.0026$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.8500 | 4.7000 | 74.0362 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.3202 | 4.6948 | 73.9960 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.6121 | 0.0520 | 4.0059 |  |
|  | DEV $=680.8230$ | Total | 9.4471 | 152.0461 | 277.29 |
| HKB | constant | 0.2332 | 0.0006 | 0.0082 |  |
| $k=0.0099$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.6662 | 7.4605 | 71.4128 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.4401 | 7.4463 | 71.2771 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.5522 | 0.1303 | 3.7601 |  |
|  | DEV $=681.0108$ | Total | 15.0377 | 146.4582 | 287.87 |
| SRW1 | constant | 0.2333 | 0.0004 | 0.0082 |  |
| $k=0.0053$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.7419 | 6.2420 | 66.4095 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.3966 | 6.2314 | 66.3216 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.5815 | 0.0931 | 3.8972 |  |
|  | DEV $=680.9144$ | Total | 12.5670 | 136.6365 | 308.56 |
| SRW2 | constant | 0.2330 | 0.0008 | 0.0082 |  |
| $k=0.0198$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.5697 | 8.4894 | 83.1276 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.4477 | 8.4618 | 82.8461 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.4718 | 0.2311 | 3.5109 |  |
|  | DEV=681.1348 | Total | 17.1832 | 169.4928 | 248.75 |
|  | constant | 0.2315 | 0.0023 | 0.0082 |  |
| $k=0.1632$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.2062 | 9.7855 | 108.8929 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1735 | 9.6988 | 107.7686 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.0472 | 0.8081 | 2.3952 |  |
|  | DEV=681.7209 | Total | 20.2947 | 219.0648 | 192.46 |
| WA | constant | 0.2325 | 0.0013 | 0.0082 |  |
| $k=0.0446$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.4356 | 9.2691 | 96.9684 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.3784 | 9.2078 | 96.3313 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2979 | 0.4475 | 3.2152 |  |
|  | DEV $=681.3534$ | Total | 18.9257 | 196.5232 | 214.53 |

Note: $k_{u b}=11.5859$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; aestimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.1.12 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho=0.99$ and $n=1000$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a }}$ Coef. | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.2717 | 0.0000 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.0809 | 0.0000 | 207.5837 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8897 | 0.0000 | 207.5749 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.5778 | 0.0000 | 4.1206 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=1362.6041$ | Total | 0.0000 | 419.2833 | 100.00 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { KOPT } \\ & k=0.0050 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2712 | 0.0005 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.8036 | 5.3266 | 73.5617 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9551 | 5.3209 | 73.5608 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.4348 | 0.2058 | 3.4656 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=1362.8503$ | Total | 10.8538 | 150.5921 | 278.42 |
| HK | constant | 0.2715 | 0.0002 | 0.0041 |  |
| $k=0.0025$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.9258 | 3.8065 | 80.2250 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9728 | 3.8012 | 80.2039 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.5157 | 0.0912 | 3.7668 |  |
|  | DEV=1362.6963 | Total | 7.6990 | 164.1998 | 255.35 |
| HKB | constant | 0.2713 | 0.0005 | 0.0041 |  |
| $k=0.0093$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.7696 | 6.7742 | 79.9804 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0365 | 6.7631 | 79.9248 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.4426 | 0.1914 | 3.4780 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=1362.9211$ | Total | 13.7292 | 163.3873 | 256.62 |
| SRW1 | constant | 0.2714 | 0.0003 | 0.0041 |  |
| $k=0.0050$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.8439 | 5.3074 | 73.5756 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9969 | 5.2982 | 73.5455 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.4707 | 0.1539 | 3.6060 |  |
|  | DEV=1362.7987 | Total | 10.7598 | 150.7313 | 278.17 |
|  | constant | 0.2710 | 0.0007 | 0.0041 |  |
| $k=0.0183$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.6230 | 8.3358 | 101.1638 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0675 | 8.3198 | 101.0625 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.3562 | 0.3059 | 3.2766 |  |
|  | DEV=1363.1549 | Total | 16.9621 | 205.5069 | 204.02 |
| GM | constant | 0.2701 | 0.0016 | 0.0041 |  |
| $k=0.1635$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.1345 | 11.4379 | 204.3483 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0816 | 11.3816 | 202.8520 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.0020 | 0.7872 | 2.4299 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=1364.0300$ | Total | 23.6083 | 409.6343 | 102.36 |
| WA | constant | 0.2706 | 0.0012 | 0.0041 |  |
| $k=0.0415$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.3660 | 10.1202 | 149.0197 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0935 | 10.1003 | 148.7959 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.1937 | 0.5130 | 3.1266 |  |
|  | DEV $=1363.6378$ | Total | 20.7346 | 300.9463 | 139.32 |

Note: $k_{u b}=11.5986$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; a ${ }^{\text {a }}$ stimated standardized regression coefficients

## A. 2 The Results of the Simulation Study in case of Five Explanatory Variables

Table A.2.1 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho_{12}=0.90, \rho_{34}=0.90$ and $n=100$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a }}$ Coef. | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.4027 | 0.0000 | 0.0462 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.8366 | 0.0000 | 25.1127 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.7594 | 0.0000 | 25.0471 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.8464 | 0.0000 | 25.4739 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 3.1873 | 0.0000 | 25.5151 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.5365 | 0.0000 | 4.8319 |  |
|  | DEV $=126.0612$ | Total | 0.0000 | 106.0269 | 100.00 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { KOPT } \\ & k=0.0247 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3886 | 0.0142 | 0.0460 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.2178 | 1.9133 | 12.0266 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9021 | 1.8625 | 11.7683 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.0284 | 2.0226 | 12.4461 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.1912 | 2.0563 | 12.6080 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.2702 | 0.4123 | 3.6956 |  |
|  | DEV $=126.6439$ | Total | 8.2812 | 52.5905 | 201.61 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{HK} \\ & k=0.0059 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3982 | 0.0045 | 0.0461 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.6294 | 0.8197 | 15.6367 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8389 | 0.8075 | 15.5527 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.5258 | 0.8636 | 15.8671 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.8195 | 0.8729 | 15.9170 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.4568 | 0.1276 | 4.3710 |  |
|  | DEV $=126.1527$ | Total | 3.4959 | 67.3906 | 157.33 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { HKB } \\ & k=0.0235 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3903 | 0.0125 | 0.0460 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.2534 | 1.8968 | 12.0640 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9844 | 1.8576 | 11.8435 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.9478 | 2.0479 | 12.7429 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.1542 | 2.0783 | 12.9097 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.3168 | 0.3405 | 3.7794 |  |
|  | DEV $=126.5593$ | Total | 8.2335 | 53.3854 | 198.61 |
| SRW1$k=0.0144$ | constant | 0.3934 | 0.0094 | 0.0460 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.4282 | 1.4521 | 12.6869 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8936 | 1.4240 | 12.5447 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2182 | 1.5417 | 13.0013 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.4570 | 1.5622 | 13.0947 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.3689 | 0.2627 | 4.0086 |  |
|  | DEV $=126.3557$ | Total | 6.2520 | 55.3821 | 191.45 |
| SRW2$k=0.0578$ | constant | 0.3811 | 0.0219 | 0.0461 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.8689 | 2.7638 | $13.9794$ |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0320 | 2.6826 | 13.4140 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.4817 | 2.9788 | 15.5549 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.5604 | 3.0408 | 15.9891 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.1249 | 0.6168 | 3.3272 |  |
|  | DEV=127.2638 | Total | 12.1047 | 62.3107 | 170.16 |

Table A.2.1 (Continued)

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a }}$ Coef. | $\mid$ Bias | MSE | RE |
| :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| GM | constant | 0.3680 | 0.0352 | 0.0464 |  |
| $k=0.1756$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.2850 | 3.7058 | 22.0825 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0458 | 3.5337 | 20.0272 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | 0.1048 | 3.9957 | 26.3218 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 0.7179 | 4.1633 | 28.3147 |  |
| WA | $w_{5}$ | -0.8210 | 1.0077 | 3.0907 |  |
| $k=0.1533$ |  | Total | 16.4414 | 99.8833 | 106.15 |
|  | DEV=128.8027 |  |  |  |  |
|  | constant | 0.3675 | 0.0357 | 0.0464 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.3496 | 3.6081 | 20.0828 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9665 | 3.4519 | 18.6442 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.0443 | 3.8521 | 23.3037 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 0.9008 | 3.9746 | 24.4224 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.8218 | 1.0358 | 3.2573 |  |
|  | DEV $=128.6212$ | Total | 15.9582 | 89.7568 | 118.13 |

Note: $k_{u b}=6.8765$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; astimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.2.2 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho_{12}=0.90, \rho_{34}=0.90$ and $n=200$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a }}$ Coef. | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.3341 | 0.0000 | 0.0215 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.9298 | 0.0000 | 23.0035 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0494 | 0.0000 | 22.9942 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.1465 | 0.0000 | 23.0413 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.2041 | 0.0000 | 23.0598 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.1753 | 0.0000 | 4.3984 |  |
|  | DEV=263.9890 | Total | 0.0000 | 96.5187 | 100.00 |
| KOPT | constant | 0.3285 | 0.0056 | 0.0214 |  |
| $k=0.0322$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.5726 | 1.9270 | 10.6715 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0549 | 1.9253 | 10.6423 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.5932 | 1.8667 | 10.4741 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.5289 | 1.8906 | 10.5482 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.9476 | 0.3700 | 3.3220 |  |
|  | DEV=264.5599 | Total | 7.9852 | 45.6795 | 211.30 |
| HK | constant | 0.3322 | 0.0019 | 0.0215 |  |
| $k=0.0085$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.8110 | 0.8992 | 13.6383 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0712 | 0.8948 | 13.6311 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.9258 | 0.8546 | 13.5412 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.9511 | 0.8620 | 13.5692 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.1083 | 0.1169 | 3.9514 |  |
|  | DEV=264.0962 | Total | 3.6295 | 58.3527 | 165.41 |
| HKB | constant | 0.3290 | 0.0051 | 0.0214 |  |
| $k=0.0332$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.5990 | 1.9789 | 10.8090 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1000 | 1.9686 | 10.7503 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.5108 | 1.9249 | 10.6494 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.4733 | 1.9434 | 10.7107 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.9866 | 0.3160 | 3.3501 |  |
|  | DEV=264.5185 | Total | 8.1369 | 46.2909 | 208.50 |
| SRW1 | constant | 0.3304 | 0.0036 | 0.0214 |  |
| $k=0.0188$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.7023 | 1.4763 | 11.2836 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0764 | 1.4724 | 11.2714 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.7462 | 1.4153 | 11.0819 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.7359 | 1.4299 | 11.1272 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.0417 | 0.2269 | 3.6218 |  |
|  | DEV=264.2860 | Total | 6.0245 | 48.4074 | 199.39 |
| SRW2 | constant | 0.3256 | 0.0085 | 0.0214 |  |
| $k=0.0732$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.3932 | 2.7030 | 12.6282 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0567 | 2.6888 | 12.4916 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.2390 | 2.6367 | 12.4348 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.1143 | 2.6719 | 12.5821 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.8435 | 0.5466 | 2.9208 |  |
|  | DEV $=265.1143$ | Total | 11.2555 | 53.0789 | 181.84 |

Table A.2.2 (Continued)

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a Coef. }}$ | $\mid$ Bias | MSE | RE |
| :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| GM | constant | 0.3197 | 0.0144 | 0.0214 |  |
| $k=0.2147$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.0429 | 3.5541 | 19.7841 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9225 | 3.5297 | 19.5741 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | 0.1699 | 3.4835 | 19.8101 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 0.5298 | 3.5567 | 20.5222 |  |
| WA | $w_{5}$ | -0.5846 | 0.9403 | 2.7682 |  |
| $k=0.1904$ |  | Total | 15.0787 | 82.4802 | 117.02 |
|  | DEV=266.5182 |  |  |  |  |
|  | constant | 0.3201 | 0.0140 | 0.0214 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.0634 | 3.4449 | 18.0254 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9080 | 3.4171 | 17.6877 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | 0.0433 | 3.3558 | 17.7315 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 0.6625 | 3.4235 | 18.1956 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.6036 | 0.9222 | 2.7717 |  |
|  | DEV=266.3062 | Total | 14.5774 | 74.4333 | 129.67 |

Note: $k_{u b}=9.0394$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; aestimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.2.3 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho_{12}=0.90, \rho_{34}=0.90$ and $n=500$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a Coef. }}$ | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.2651 | 0.0000 | 0.0083 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.6139 | 0.0000 | 21.8392 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8327 | 0.0000 | 21.8409 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2352 | 0.0000 | 21.9014 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.0367 | 0.0000 | 21.9134 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.0238 | 0.0000 | 4.1698 |  |
|  | DEV $=677.5409$ | Total | 0.0000 | 91.6729 | 100.00 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { KOPT } \\ & k=0.0333 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2633 | 0.0018 | 0.0083 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.3209 | 1.7834 | 9.7136 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8473 | 1.7683 | 9.6587 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.5934 | 1.9526 | 10.3072 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.3158 | 1.9524 | 10.3513 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.8573 | 0.3268 | 3.0999 |  |
|  | DEV $=678.1039$ | Total | 7.7853 | 43.1390 | 212.51 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{HK} \\ & k=0.0088 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2644 | 0.0006 | 0.0083 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.5126 | 0.8686 | 12.5264 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8544 | 0.8617 | 12.5133 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.9397 | 0.9423 | 12.6615 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.7197 | 0.9426 | 12.6720 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.9672 | 0.1085 | 3.7134 |  |
|  | DEV=677.6580 | Total | 3.7244 | 54.0949 | 169.47 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{HKB} \\ & k=0.0372 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2634 | 0.0017 | 0.0083 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.3253 | 1.8929 | 9.7546 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8941 | 1.8811 | 9.7130 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.5208 | 2.0922 | 10.5879 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.2567 | 2.0930 | 10.6193 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.8761 | 0.2909 | 3.0973 |  |
|  | DEV $=678.1085$ | Total | 8.2517 | 43.7803 | 209.39 |
| SRW1$k=0.0183$ | constant | 0.2640 | 0.0011 | 0.0083 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.4361 | 1.3519 | 10.4389 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8575 | 1.3416 | 10.4097 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.7579 | 1.4718 | 10.7517 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.5169 | 1.4731 | 10.7724 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.9191 | 0.1991 | 3.4260 |  |
|  | DEV=677.8306 | Total | 5.8387 | 45.8069 | 200.13 |
| SRW2$k=0.0781$ | constant | 0.2624 | 0.0027 | 0.0083 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.1671 | 2.4981 | 11.1230 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8695 | 2.4778 | 11.0432 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.2781 | 2.7558 | 12.5934 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 0.9576 | 2.7608 | 12.6921 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.7710 | 0.4867 | 2.7052 |  |
|  | DEV $=678.6442$ | Total | 10.9818 | 50.1652 | 182.74 |

Table A.2.3 (Continued)

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a }}$ Coef. | $\mid$ Bias | MSE | RE |
| :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| GM | constant | 0.2602 | 0.0048 | 0.0082 |  |
| $k=0.2588$ | $w_{1}$ | 0.8291 | 3.3694 | 17.9653 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.7738 | 3.3250 | 17.6306 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | 0.1063 | 3.7074 | 20.7325 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 0.4214 | 3.7232 | 21.2305 |  |
| WA | $w_{5}$ | -0.5500 | 0.9061 | 2.3398 |  |
| $k=0.2013$ |  | Total | 15.0359 | 79.9069 | 114.72 |
|  | DEV=680.0756 |  |  |  |  |
|  | constant | 0.2607 | 0.0044 | 0.0082 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 0.8896 | 3.1907 | 15.7318 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.7612 | 3.1601 | 15.5594 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.0104 | 3.4954 | 17.9968 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 0.5638 | 3.5232 | 18.3726 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.5671 | 0.8464 | 2.4982 |  |
|  | DEV=679.7693 | Total | 14.2201 | 70.1671 | 130.65 |

Note: $k_{u b}=12.6166$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; aestimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.2.4 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho_{12}=0.90, \rho_{34}=0.90$ and $n=1,000$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a }}$ Coef. | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.3126 | 0.0000 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.8427 | 0.0000 | 21.7771 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9368 | 0.0000 | 21.7734 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.5380 | 0.0000 | 21.8117 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.6285 | 0.0000 | 21.8157 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.0408 | 0.0000 | 4.1493 |  |
|  | DEV=1355.0308 | Total | 0.0000 | 91.3313 | 100.00 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { KOPT } \\ & k=0.0317 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3115 | 0.0011 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.5166 | 1.7593 | 9.5514 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9202 | 1.7622 | 9.5151 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.8244 | 1.8415 | 9.8517 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.7673 | 1.8691 | 9.9511 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.8470 | 0.3407 | 3.0623 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=1355.6090$ | Total | 7.5738 | 41.9358 | 217.79 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { HK } \\ & k=0.0092 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3122 | 0.0004 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.7350 | 0.8607 | 12.2472 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9494 | 0.8618 | 12.2399 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2263 | 0.8887 | 12.3058 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.2757 | 0.8985 | 12.3249 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.9797 | 0.1111 | 3.6807 |  |
|  | DEV=1355.1459 | Total | 3.6211 | 52.8026 | 172.97 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { HKB } \\ & k=0.0359 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3115 | 0.0010 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.5424 | 1.8435 | 9.6026 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9688 | 1.8461 | 9.5721 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.7246 | 1.9489 | 10.0592 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.6974 | 1.9755 | 10.1667 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.8770 | 0.2942 | 3.0814 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=1355.5846$ | Total | 7.9092 | 42.4862 | 214.97 |
| SRW1$k=0.0194$ | constant | 0.3119 | 0.0007 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.6427 | 1.3420 | 10.1769 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9502 | 1.3444 | 10.1606 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.0038 | 1.4020 | 10.3571 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.0154 | 1.4204 | 10.4078 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.9262 | 0.2064 | 3.3779 |  |
|  | DEV=1355.3249 | Total | 5.7159 | 44.4844 | 205.31 |
| SRW2$k=0.0753$ | constant | 0.3109 | 0.0016 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.3579 | 2.4412 | 10.8814 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9349 | 2.4400 | 10.7885 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.4019 | 2.6009 | 11.9862 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.2837 | 2.6502 | 12.2610 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.7641 | 0.4949 | 2.6890 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=1356.1418$ | Total | 10.6289 | 48.6102 | 187.89 |

Table A.2.4 (Continued)

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a Coef. }}$ | $\mid$ Bias | MSE | RE |
| :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
|  |  |  |  |  |  |
|  | constant | 0.3098 | 0.0028 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.0165 | 3.2365 | 17.0472 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8522 | 3.2131 | 16.6309 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | 0.0534 | 3.4530 | 19.2832 |  |
| WA | $w_{4}$ | 0.6442 | 3.5649 | 20.3364 |  |
| $k=0.1953$ | $w_{5}$ | -0.5643 | 0.8394 | 2.2272 |  |
|  |  | Total | 14.3098 | 75.5289 | 120.92 |
|  | DEV $=1357.4274$ |  |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |  |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.0265 | 3.1321 | 15.4266 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8193 | 3.1131 | 15.0906 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.0415 | 3.3364 | 17.4634 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 0.7431 | 3.4330 | 18.2913 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.5593 | 0.8522 | 2.4668 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=1357.3286$ | Total | 13.8696 | 68.7428 | 132.86 |

Note: $k_{u b}=12.2580$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; a estimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.2.5 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.90$ and $n=100$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a Coef. }}$ | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.3956 | 0.0000 | 0.0463 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.4569 | 0.0000 | 250.3804 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.3547 | 0.0000 | 250.2962 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -2.0037 | 0.0000 | 25.4287 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 3.1694 | 0.0000 | 25.4930 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.7626 | 0.0000 | 4.8530 |  |
|  | DEV $=125.8812$ | Total | 0.0000 | 556.4976 | 100.00 |
| KOPT | constant | 0.3867 | 0.0091 | 0.0461 |  |
| $k=0.0052$ | $w_{1}$ | 2.2450 | 6.1029 | 93.1235 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.3052 | 6.1000 | 93.0933 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.4877 | 1.1854 | 17.1834 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.5703 | 1.1892 | 17.2675 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.5720 | 0.2720 | 4.2737 |  |
|  | DEV=126.2472 | Total | 14.8585 | 224.9876 | 247.35 |
| HK | constant | 0.3923 | 0.0034 | 0.0462 |  |
| $k=0.0016$ | $w_{1}$ | 2.3734 | 3.7274 | 109.9871 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.3725 | 3.7263 | 109.9396 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.7899 | 0.5179 | 20.1907 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.9334 | 0.5189 | 20.2616 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.7080 | 0.0905 | 4.6232 |  |
|  | DEV $=125.9689$ | Total | 8.8544 | 265.0484 | 209.96 |
| HKB | constant | 0.3865 | 0.0092 | 0.0462 |  |
| $k=0.0074$ | $w_{1}$ | 2.2387 | 7.7903 | 104.9629 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.3780 | 7.7851 | 104.8807 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.4088 | 1.3035 | 16.2154 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.5120 | 1.3144 | 16.3089 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.6100 | 0.2371 | 4.3066 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=126.3175$ | Total | 18.4396 | 246.7207 | 225.56 |
| SRW1$k=0.0041$ | constant | 0.3891 | 0.0066 | 0.0462 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.2948 | 5.8572 | 93.6427 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.3733 | 5.8528 | 93.5624 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.5850 | 0.9590 | 17.8044 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.7035 | 0.9654 | 17.8844 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.6466 | 0.1786 | 4.4394 |  |
|  | DEV=126.1247 | Total | 13.8196 | 227.3795 | 244.74 |
| SRW2 | constant | 0.3802 | 0.0156 | 0.0462 |  |
| $k=0.0186$ | $w_{1}$ | 2.0094 | 9.9451 | 144.7054 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.4130 | 9.9303 | 144.5000 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.0079 | 2.0754 | 15.6295 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.0494 | 2.0957 | 15.8335 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.4708 | 0.4210 | 4.0250 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=126.7958$ | Total | 24.4830 | 324.7396 | 171.37 |

Table A.2.5 (Continued)

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a Coef. }}$ | $\mid$ Bias | MSE | RE |
| :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| GM | constant | 0.3658 | 0.0301 | 0.0466 |  |
| $k=0.1102$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.4182 | 12.6553 | 263.4700 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.3914 | 12.5859 | 261.2868 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.0676 | 3.6272 | 22.1830 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 0.8935 | 3.7509 | 23.4573 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.0844 | 0.8737 | 3.2672 |  |
|  |  | Total | 33.5232 | 573.7109 | 97.00 |
| $k=0.0443$ |  |  |  | 0.0244 | 0.0465 |
|  | DEV=128.2829 | $w_{1}$ | 1.6774 | 11.6432 | 207.3713 |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.4124 | 11.6225 | 206.9010 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.5195 | 2.9551 | 18.4481 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.4538 | 2.9958 | 18.9664 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.2505 | 0.6958 | 3.8880 |  |
|  |  | Total | 29.9369 | 455.6211 | 122.14 |

Note: $k_{u b}=6.7896$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; ${ }^{\text {a }}$ estimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.2.6 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.90$ and $n=200$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a Coef. }}$ | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.3304 | 0.0000 | 0.0215 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.7310 | 0.0000 | 224.5251 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0618 | 0.0000 | 224.5003 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.4547 | 0.0000 | 23.1174 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.5626 | 0.0000 | 23.1423 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.2865 | 0.0000 | 4.3952 |  |
|  | DEV=264.1144 | Total | 0.0000 | 499.7017 | 100.00 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { KOPT } \\ & k=0.0047 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3270 | 0.0034 | 0.0214 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.5962 | 5.8673 | 86.1817 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0595 | 5.8785 | 86.2325 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.0485 | 0.9942 | 15.8317 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.0865 | 1.0203 | 15.9228 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.1810 | 0.1958 | 3.8604 |  |
|  | DEV=264.4507 | Total | 13.9595 | 208.0505 | 240.18 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{HK} \\ & k=0.0017 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3291 | 0.0014 | 0.0215 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.7035 | 3.7260 | 98.6046 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0537 | 3.7277 | 98.6062 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2932 | 0.4557 | 18.4551 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.3850 | 0.4597 | 18.4807 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.2549 | 0.0667 | 4.2063 |  |
|  | DEV=264.2082 | Total | 8.4371 | 238.3743 | 209.63 |
| HKB$k=0.0082$ | constant | 0.3267 | 0.0037 | 0.0214 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.4799 | 7.8596 | 100.0370 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1994 | 7.8701 | 100.0810 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.9502 | 1.1751 | 14.5276 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.0053 | 1.1912 | 14.6038 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.1948 | 0.1756 | 3.8848 |  |
|  | DEV=264.5865 | Total | 18.2754 | 233.1556 | 214.32 |
| SRW1$k=0.0039$ | constant | 0.3280 | 0.0025 | 0.0214 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.6104 | 5.6374 | 86.6257 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1084 | 5.6407 | 86.6353 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.1443 | 0.7995 | 16.4633 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.2207 | 0.8079 | 16.5037 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.2249 | 0.1209 | 4.0576 |  |
|  | DEV $=264.3480$ | Total | 13.0088 | 210.3072 | 237.61 |
| SRW2$k=0.0186$ | constant | 0.3246 | 0.0059 | 0.0214 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.3508 | 9.7971 | 135.5886 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.2216 | 9.8147 | 135.6581 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.6648 | 1.7769 | 13.5632 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.6748 | 1.8098 | 13.7446 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.1173 | 0.2952 | 3.5921 |  |
|  | DEV=264.9969 | Total | 23.4995 | 302.1681 | 165.37 |

Table A.2.6 (Continued)

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a }}$ Coef. | $\mid$ Bias | MSE | RE |
| :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| GM | constant | 0.3178 | 0.0126 | 0.0214 |  |
| $k=0.1390$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.0455 | 12.4808 | 237.2729 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0360 | 12.5314 | 237.8926 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | 0.0675 | 3.3988 | 18.9067 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 0.7236 | 3.4916 | 19.8215 |  |
| WA | $w_{5}$ | -0.8157 | 0.7691 | 2.6322 |  |
| $k=0.0458$ |  | Total | 32.6844 | 516.5474 | 96.74 |
|  | DEV $=266.4642$ |  |  |  |  |
|  | constant | 0.3214 | 0.0090 | 0.0214 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.2114 | 11.4731 | 190.7445 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1552 | 11.4971 | 190.8717 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.2885 | 2.5671 | 14.8952 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.2100 | 2.6229 | 15.3857 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.9776 | 0.5038 | 3.2731 |  |
|  | DEV $=265.7009$ | Total | 28.6730 | 415.1917 | 120.35 |

Note: $k_{u b}=9.0181$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; ${ }^{\text {a }}$ estimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.2.7 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.90$ and $n=500$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a }}$ Coef. | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.2615 | 0.0000 | 0.0083 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.6732 | 0.0000 | 211.3365 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8831 | 0.0000 | 211.3355 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2852 | 0.0000 | 21.8253 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.2428 | 0.0000 | 21.8337 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.9525 | 0.0000 | 4.1692 |  |
|  | DEV=677.8282 | Total | 0.0000 | 470.5084 | 100.00 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { KOPT } \\ & k=0.0059 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2604 | 0.0011 | 0.0083 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.7159 | 5.5622 | 75.6525 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.6962 | 5.5745 | 75.7392 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.9296 | 0.9663 | 14.3284 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.8288 | 0.9846 | 14.3828 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.8636 | 0.1936 | 3.6276 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=678.1681$ | Total | 13.2823 | 183.7387 | 256.07 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{HK} \\ & k=0.0023 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.2610 | 0.0004 | 0.0083 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.7660 | 3.7274 | 84.6491 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.7566 | 3.7290 | 84.6418 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.1258 | 0.4748 | 16.8616 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.0705 | 0.4774 | 16.8696 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.9295 | 0.0598 | 3.9620 |  |
|  | DEV=677.9307 | Total | 8.4688 | 206.9924 | 227.31 |
| HKB$k=0.0110$ | constant | 0.2603 | 0.0012 | 0.0083 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.6279 | 7.5134 | 89.4944 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8148 | 7.5205 | 89.5277 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.8186 | 1.1903 | 12.9997 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.7343 | 1.2017 | 13.0362 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.8755 | 0.1725 | 3.6107 |  |
|  | DEV $=678.3155$ | Total | 17.5998 | 208.6769 | 225.47 |
| SRW1$k=0.0049$ | constant | 0.2607 | 0.0007 | 0.0083 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.7410 | 5.3347 | 75.8115 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.7500 | 5.3379 | 75.8113 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.9980 | 0.7782 | 15.0686 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.9298 | 0.7845 | 15.0844 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.9096 | 0.1066 | 3.8196 |  |
|  | DEV=678.0576 | Total | 12.3425 | 185.6036 | 253.50 |
| SRW2$k=0.0231$ | constant | 0.2597 | 0.0018 | 0.0083 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.4706 | 9.0672 | 117.6608 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.8780 | 9.0787 | 117.7376 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.5861 | 1.7040 | 12.1191 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.4650 | 1.7240 | 12.2137 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.8194 | 0.2861 | 3.3469 |  |
|  | DEV $=678.6742$ | Total | 21.8618 | 263.0863 | 178.84 |

Table A.2.7 (Continued)

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a }}$ Coef. | $\mid$ Bias | MSE | RE |
| :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| GM | constant | 0.2574 | 0.0041 | 0.0082 |  |
| $k=0.1769$ | $w_{1}$ | 0.9503 | 11.5095 | 205.6181 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9148 | 11.5362 | 205.2973 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | 0.0643 | 3.1357 | 15.9533 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 0.6455 | 3.2102 | 16.5493 |  |
| WA | $w_{5}$ | -0.5588 | 0.7761 | 2.4006 |  |
| $k=0.0545$ | Total | 30.1719 | 445.8268 | 105.54 |  |
|  | REV $=680.0883$ |  |  |  |  |
|  | constant | 0.2587 | 0.0028 | 0.0082 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.2030 | 10.5714 | 164.3453 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9487 | 10.5875 | 164.4823 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.2600 | 2.3956 | 12.8822 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.0623 | 2.4365 | 13.1711 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.7092 | 0.4961 | 3.0808 |  |
|  | Dotal | 26.4899 | 357.9700 | 131.44 |  |

Note: $k_{u b}=12.7354$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; a estimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.2.8 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.90$ and $n=1,000$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a }}$ Coef. | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.3118 | 0.0000 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.8676 | 0.0000 | 209.8126 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9309 | 0.0000 | 209.8143 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2086 | 0.0000 | 21.7579 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.2570 | 0.0000 | 21.7643 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.0885 | 0.0000 | 4.1482 |  |
|  | DEV=1355.0240 | Total | 0.0000 | 467.3013 | 100.00 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { KOPT } \\ & k=0.0053 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3112 | 0.0007 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.6949 | 5.6674 | 78.3538 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9384 | 5.6773 | 78.3839 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.8896 | 0.9644 | 14.6942 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.8686 | 0.9780 | 14.7358 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.0076 | 0.1481 | 3.5921 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=1355.3653$ | Total | 13.4359 | 189.7640 | 246.25 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{HK} \\ & k=0.0021 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3116 | 0.0003 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.7999 | 3.7464 | 88.2333 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9619 | 3.7499 | 88.2376 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.0705 | 0.4544 | 17.1208 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.1033 | 0.4559 | 17.1257 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.0686 | 0.0432 | 3.9574 |  |
|  | DEV=1355.1230 | Total | 8.4500 | 214.6789 | 217.67 |
| HKB$k=0.0100$ | constant | 0.3111 | 0.0007 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.6212 | 7.6834 | 92.5318 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0602 | 7.6897 | 92.5189 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.7943 | 1.1619 | 13.3758 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.7929 | 1.1712 | 13.4017 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.0207 | 0.1310 | 3.6183 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=1355.5066$ | Total | 17.8380 | 215.4506 | 216.89 |
| SRW1$k=0.0045$ | constant | 0.3114 | 0.0005 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.7360 | 5.4377 | 78.6712 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9891 | 5.4436 | 78.6752 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.9602 | 0.7650 | 15.3297 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.9778 | 0.7692 | 15.3374 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.0490 | 0.0804 | 3.8104 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=1355.2523$ | Total | 12.4964 | 191.8281 | 243.60 |
| SRW2$k=0.0212$ | constant | 0.3107 | 0.0011 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.4846 | 9.3601 | 122.7785 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0938 | 9.3682 | 122.7329 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.5693 | 1.7065 | 12.5476 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.5266 | 1.7243 | 12.6297 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.9622 | 0.2315 | 3.3172 |  |
|  | DEV=1355.8843 | Total | 22.3917 | 274.0101 | 170.54 |

Table A.2.8 (Continued)

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a Coef. }}$ | $\mid$ Bias | MSE | RE |
| :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| GM | constant | 0.3094 | 0.0024 | 0.0041 |  |
| $k=0.1456$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.0593 | 12.0344 | 222.2062 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0474 | 12.0121 | 220.5507 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | 0.0680 | 3.1732 | 16.5923 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 0.7180 | 3.2232 | 17.1171 |  |
| WA | $w_{5}$ | -0.7235 | 0.6653 | 2.2621 |  |
| $k=0.0513$ | DEV $=1357.2997$ | Total | 31.1106 | 478.7326 | 97.61 |
|  | constant | 0.3101 | 0.0018 | 0.0041 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.2698 | 11.0106 | 175.3745 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0963 | 11.0185 | 175.2076 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.2439 | 2.4493 | 13.7207 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.1193 | 2.4875 | 14.0103 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.8470 | 0.4234 | 2.9312 |  |
|  |  | Total | 27.3911 | 381.2484 | 122.57 |

Note: $k_{u b}=12.3705$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; aestimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.2.9 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.99$ and $n=100$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a }}$ Coef. | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.3899 | 0.0000 | 0.0460 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.6157 | 0.0000 | 248.1356 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0282 | 0.0000 | 248.0858 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -2.8003 | 0.0000 | 250.7020 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 4.0050 | 0.0000 | 250.6873 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.4002 | 0.0000 | 4.8008 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=126.4370$ | Total | 0.0000 | 1002.4576 | 100.00 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { KOPT } \\ & k=0.0027 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3815 | 0.0085 | 0.0459 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.2133 | 6.1726 | 109.2940 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.2915 | 6.1705 | 109.2714 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.3722 | 6.0464 | 108.7649 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.5275 | 6.0673 | 108.8804 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.3223 | 0.1756 | 4.4520 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=126.8505$ | Total | 24.6408 | 440.7086 | 227.46 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { HK } \\ & k=0.0007 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3867 | 0.0032 | 0.0459 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.4681 | 3.0075 | 140.2593 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1354 | 3.0066 | 140.2485 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -2.1138 | 2.8891 | 140.0022 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 3.3047 | 2.8920 | 140.0284 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.3802 | 0.0673 | 4.6640 |  |
|  | DEV $=126.5304$ | Total | 11.8657 | 565.2483 | 177.35 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{HKB} \\ & k=0.0033 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3812 | 0.0088 | 0.0459 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.1772 | 6.7595 | 110.3104 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.3429 | 6.7541 | 110.2411 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.1969 | 6.6936 | 111.0590 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.3609 | 6.7027 | 111.1020 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.3296 | 0.1730 | 4.4610 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=126.9185$ | Total | 27.0917 | 447.2193 | 224.15 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { SRW1 } \\ & k=0.0017 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3837 | 0.0063 | 0.0459 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.3509 | 5.0312 | 114.1448 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.2078 | 5.0288 | 114.1186 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.6340 | 4.8994 | 113.5512 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.8113 | 4.9066 | 113.5874 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.3538 | 0.1249 | 4.5591 |  |
|  | DEV $=126.6969$ | Total | 19.9972 | 460.0071 | 217.92 |
| SRW2$k=0.0078$ | constant | 0.3761 | 0.0140 | 0.0460 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.9837 | 9.1541 | 135.5813 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.4233 | 9.1462 | 135.3849 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.5781 | 9.1884 | 140.5547 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.7076 | 9.2090 | 140.6861 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.2586 | 0.2831 | 4.2462 |  |
|  | DEV=127.4020 | Total | 36.9947 | 556.4992 | 180.14 |

Table A.2.9 (Continued)

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a Coef. }}$ | $\mid$ Bias | MSE | RE |
| :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| GM | constant | 0.3627 | 0.0276 | 0.0464 |  |
| $k=0.0842$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.4236 | 12.6132 | 252.5444 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.4128 | 12.5666 | 250.6083 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | 0.3683 | 12.8529 | 268.9274 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 0.5313 | 12.8988 | 270.1859 |  |
| WA | $w_{5}$ | -0.9262 | 0.7184 | 3.1939 |  |
| $k=0.0197$ |  | Total | 51.6775 | 1045.5064 | 95.88 |
|  | DEV=128.8905 |  |  |  |  |
|  | constant | 0.3700 | 0.0202 | 0.0462 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.7289 | 11.2054 | 191.6185 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.4877 | 11.1939 | 191.1592 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.0126 | 11.3562 | 203.4055 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.0843 | 11.3972 | 203.7772 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.1420 | 0.4442 | 3.9871 |  |
|  | DEV=128.1025 | Total | 45.6171 | 793.9939 | 126.26 |

Note: $k_{u b}=6.9007$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; aestimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.2.10 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.99$ and $n=200$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a Coef. }}$ | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.4977 | 0.0000 | 0.0225 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 3.6077 | 0.0000 | 232.3441 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.4026 | 0.0000 | 232.2606 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.0104 | 0.0000 | 233.9651 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.3918 | 0.0000 | 233.9892 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.7509 | 0.0000 | 4.5809 |  |
|  | DEV=256.4165 | Total | 0.0000 | 937.1624 | 100.00 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { KOPT } \\ & k=0.0030 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.4922 | 0.0054 | 0.0225 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.7925 | 5.8656 | 97.7974 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0768 | 5.8580 | 97.6846 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.2788 | 6.0187 | 99.7477 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.6080 | 6.0069 | 99.6445 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.6748 | 0.1479 | 4.2555 |  |
|  | DEV=256.8360 | Total | 23.9025 | 399.1522 | 234.79 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{HK} \\ & k=0.0008 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.4957 | 0.0020 | 0.0225 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 3.2818 | 2.6867 | 130.4903 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.6938 | 2.6847 | 130.4293 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.7022 | 2.7704 | 131.6019 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.0700 | 2.7681 | 131.5952 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.7308 | 0.0490 | 4.4742 |  |
|  | DEV=256.5005 | Total | 10.9608 | 528.6134 | 177.29 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { НКВ } \\ & k=0.0035 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.4922 | 0.0055 | 0.0225 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.7482 | 6.2829 | 98.2481 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.1517 | 6.2759 | 98.1468 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.2002 | 6.4676 | 100.9968 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.5412 | 6.4596 | 100.9163 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.6830 | 0.1362 | 4.2898 |  |
|  | DEV=256.8754 | Total | 25.6276 | 402.6202 | 232.77 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { SRW1 } \\ & k=0.0019 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.4938 | 0.0039 | 0.0225 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 3.0011 | 4.6856 | 102.9654 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 0.9304 | 4.6836 | 102.9029 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.4568 | 4.8094 | 104.3895 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.8090 | 4.8036 | 104.3455 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.7036 | 0.0991 | 4.3699 |  |
|  | DEV=256.6704 | Total | 19.0852 | 418.9956 | 223.67 |
| SRW2$k=0.0089$ | constant | 0.4888 | 0.0089 | 0.0225 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.3598 | 8.7131 | 122.7683 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.4202 | 8.7011 | 122.5455 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | 0.1171 | 8.8815 | 124.9063 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.1828 | 8.8666 | 124.7436 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.6052 | 0.2466 | 4.0577 |  |
|  | DEV=257.3627 | Total | 35.4179 | 499.0439 | 187.79 |

Table A.2.10 (Continued)

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a Coef. }}$ | $\mid$ Bias | MSE | RE |
| :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| GM | constant | 0.4805 | 0.0172 | 0.0227 |  |
| $k=0.0655$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.7398 | 11.9432 | 222.8291 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.5771 | 11.9068 | 221.7649 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | 0.4711 | 12.1284 | 228.3726 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 0.6442 | 12.0948 | 227.9301 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.3229 | 0.5937 | 3.1175 |  |
| WA | Total | 48.6840 | 904.0369 | 103.66 |  |
| $k=0.0214$ | DEV $=258.6292$ |  |  |  |  |
|  | constant | 0.4846 | 0.0131 | 0.0226 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 2.0060 | 10.7349 | 174.8088 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.5674 | 10.7086 | 174.2855 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | 0.3778 | 10.8948 | 177.5425 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 0.8527 | 10.8693 | 177.3059 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.4738 | 0.4128 | 3.7920 |  |
|  |  | Total | 43.6335 | 707.7573 | 132.41 |

Note: $k_{u b}=7.0632$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; aestimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.2.11 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for

$$
\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.99 \text { and } n=500 .
$$

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a }}$ Coef. | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.4247 | 0.0000 | 0.0085 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 0.8543 | 0.0000 | 217.2867 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.7656 | 0.0000 | 217.3002 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -2.0822 | 0.0000 | 216.3521 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 3.0030 | 0.0000 | 216.3596 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.2144 | 0.0000 | 4.2826 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=664.7201$ | Total | 0.0000 | 871.5897 | 100.00 |
| KOPT | constant | 0.4229 | 0.0018 | 0.0085 |  |
| $k=0.0031$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.0079 | 5.6345 | 88.6548 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.5141 | 5.6273 | 88.6920 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.9494 | 5.5414 | 87.4119 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.8356 | 5.5430 | 87.4253 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.1578 | 0.1311 | 3.9343 |  |
|  | DEV=665.1476 | Total | 22.4791 | 356.1267 | 244.74 |
| HK | constant | 0.4240 | 0.0007 | 0.0085 |  |
| $k=0.0009$ | $w_{1}$ | 0.9432 | 2.7574 | 115.2821 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.6543 | 2.7546 | 115.2860 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.5962 | 2.7376 | 114.7081 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.5102 | 2.7393 | 114.7182 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.1980 | 0.0412 | 4.1699 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=664.8154$ | Total | 11.0308 | 464.1728 | 187.77 |
| HKB | constant | 0.4228 | 0.0018 | 0.0085 |  |
| $k=0.0039$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.0572 | 6.2081 | 90.2963 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.4921 | 6.2056 | 90.3397 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.8078 | 6.0721 | 87.9802 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.7054 | 6.0777 | 88.0281 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.1646 | 0.1119 | 3.9633 |  |
|  | $\mathrm{DEV}=665.2060$ | Total | 24.6772 | 360.6162 | 241.69 |
| SRW1 | constant | 0.4234 | 0.0013 | 0.0085 |  |
| $k=0.0020$ | $w_{1}$ | 0.9800 | 4.5208 | 92.9779 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.5915 | 4.5158 | 92.9889 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2080 | 4.4592 | 92.2568 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.1139 | 4.4631 | 92.2812 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.1797 | 0.0791 | 4.0695 |  |
|  | DEV $=664.9769$ | Total | 18.0393 | 374.5827 | 232.68 |
| SRW2 | constant | 0.4219 | 0.0028 | 0.0085 |  |
| $k=0.0093$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.0727 | 8.2475 | 112.2964 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.4042 | 8.2449 | 112.4102 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.3334 | 8.0064 | 106.2543 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.2075 | 8.0166 | 106.3829 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.1156 | 0.1962 | 3.7357 |  |
|  | DEV $=665.6366$ | Total | 32.7143 | 441.0881 | 197.60 |

Table A.2.11 (Continued)

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a Coef. }}$ | $\mid$ Bias | MSE | RE |
| :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| GM | constant | 0.4193 | 0.0054 | 0.0085 |  |
| $k=0.0971$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.0729 | 11.2583 | 205.0956 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0827 | 11.2888 | 205.5814 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | 0.2933 | 10.8373 | 188.4532 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 0.4499 | 10.8638 | 189.2019 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.8978 | 0.5475 | 2.5993 |  |
| WA | Total | 44.8012 | 790.9398 | 110.20 |  |
| $k=0.0227$ | DEV=666.7977 |  |  |  |  |
|  | constant | 0.4207 | 0.0040 | 0.0085 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.1016 | 10.0776 | 158.9490 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.2475 | 10.0820 | 159.2014 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | 0.0632 | 9.7186 | 146.7712 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 0.7693 | 9.7351 | 147.0870 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.0301 | 0.3300 | 3.4371 |  |
|  | DEV=666.2448 | Total | 39.9473 | 615.4542 | 141.62 |

Note: $k_{u b}=9.1594$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; aestimated standardized regression coefficients

Table A.2.12 The Results of the ML and LRR Estimator Performances for $\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.99$ and $n=1,000$.

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a Coef. }}$ | \|Bias| | MSE | RE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| ML | constant | 0.3791 | 0.0000 | 0.0042 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.5135 | 0.0000 | 211.7635 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0008 | 0.0000 | 211.7590 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.2978 | 0.0000 | 212.2370 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 2.0746 | 0.0000 | 212.2491 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.1677 | 0.0000 | 4.1950 |  |
|  | DEV=1344.3251 | Total | 0.0000 | 852.2077 | 100.00 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \text { KOPT } \\ & k=0.0033 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3783 | 0.0008 | 0.0042 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.4114 | 5.3679 | 87.3130 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0380 | 5.3612 | 87.2925 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.7419 | 5.8300 | 92.5622 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.4952 | 5.8244 | 92.5255 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.1236 | 0.1019 | 3.8866 |  |
|  | DEV=1344.7482 | Total | 22.4862 | 363.5840 | 234.39 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{HK} \\ & k=0.0009 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3788 | 0.0003 | 0.0042 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.4806 | 2.6411 | 115.2019 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0211 | 2.6393 | 115.1949 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -1.0726 | 2.8706 | 116.7888 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.8447 | 2.8702 | 116.7906 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.1544 | 0.0302 | 4.1063 |  |
|  | DEV=1344.4220 | Total | 11.0517 | 468.0867 | 182.06 |
| $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{HKB} \\ & k=0.0042 \end{aligned}$ | constant | 0.3782 | 0.0008 | 0.0042 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.4285 | 6.0012 | 88.1483 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0410 | 5.9981 | 88.1501 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.6372 | 6.5088 | 94.5757 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.3975 | 6.5081 | 94.5617 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.1248 | 0.0882 | 3.9195 |  |
|  | DEV=1344.8291 | Total | 25.1052 | 369.3596 | 230.73 |
| SRW1$k=0.0020$ | constant | 0.3785 | 0.0006 | 0.0042 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.4582 | 4.2618 | 93.0725 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0286 | 4.2585 | 93.0669 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.8807 | 4.6279 | 96.4067 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.6474 | 4.6273 | 96.4000 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.1404 | 0.0577 | 4.0244 |  |
|  | DEV=1344.5761 | Total | 17.8338 | 382.9746 | 222.52 |
| SRW2$k=0.0095$ | constant | 0.3778 | 0.0013 | 0.0042 |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.3716 | 7.9399 | 107.2112 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0481 | 7.9349 | 107.2264 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | -0.3251 | 8.5576 | 117.0363 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 1.0679 | 8.5560 | 117.0169 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.0846 | 0.1568 | 3.7057 |  |
|  | DEV=1345.2559 | Total | 33.1465 | 452.2007 | 188.46 |

Table A.2.12 (Continued)

| Method | Variable | ${ }^{\text {a}}$ Coef. | $\mid$ Bias | MSE | RE |
| :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| GM | constant | 0.3765 | 0.0026 | 0.0042 |  |
| $k=0.0952$ | $w_{1}$ | 1.0545 | 11.1549 | 207.6856 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0286 | 11.1618 | 207.4891 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | 0.2496 | 11.7897 | 212.4173 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 0.3893 | 11.7993 | 213.1414 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -0.8487 | 0.5573 | 2.5514 |  |
| WA | Total | 46.4655 | 843.2889 | 101.06 |  |
| $k=0.0233$ |  |  |  |  |  |
|  | DEV $=1346.5847$ |  |  |  |  |
|  | $w_{1}$ | 1.2385 | 9.8771 | 156.4721 |  |
|  | $w_{2}$ | 1.0804 | 9.8738 | 156.5031 |  |
|  | $w_{3}$ | 0.0259 | 10.5065 | 164.7063 |  |
|  | $w_{4}$ | 0.6826 | 10.5052 | 164.7292 |  |
|  | $w_{5}$ | -1.0065 | 0.2813 | 3.3890 |  |
|  | DEV $=1345.9021$ | Total | 41.0457 | 645.8039 | 131.96 |

Note: $k_{u b}=10.5190$; results of ridge parameter reported as medians; aestimated standardized regression coefficients

## Appendix B

## Distribution of Ridge Parameter in Case of Having Three Explanatory Variables



Figure B. 1 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho=0.90, n=100$.


Figure B. 1 (Continued)


Figure B. 1 (Continued)


Figure B. 2 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho=0.90, n=200$.


Figure B. 2 (Continued)


Figure B. 2 (Continued)


Figure B. 3 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho=0.90, n=500$.


Figure B. 3 (Continued)


Figure B. 3 (Continued)


Figure B. 4 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho=0.90, n=1000$.


Figure B. 4 (Continued)


Figure B. 4 (Continued)


Figure B. 5 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho=0.95, n=100$.


Figure B. 5 (Continued)


Figure B. 5 (Continued)


Figure B. 6 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho=0.95, n=200$.


Figure B. 6 (Continued)


Figure B. 6 (Continued)


Figure B. 7 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho=0.95, n=500$.


Figure B. 7 (Continued)


Figure B. 7 (Continued)


Figure B. 8 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho=0.95, n=1000$.


Figure B. 8 (Continued)


Figure B. 8 (Continued)


Figure B. 9 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho=0.99, n=100$.


Figure B. 9 (Continued)


Figure B. 9 (Continued)


Figure B. 10 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho=0.99, n=200$.


Figure B. 10 (Continued)


Figure B. 10 (Continued)


Figure B. 11 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho=0.99, n=500$.


Figure B. 11 (Continued)


Figure B. 11 (Continued)


Figure B. 12 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho=0.99, n=1000$.


Figure B. 12 (Continued)


Figure B. 12 (Continued)

## Appendix C

## Distribution of Ridge Parameter in Case of Having Five Explanatory Variables



Figure C. 1 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho_{12}=0.90, \rho_{34}=0.90, n=100$.


Figure C. 1 (Continued)


Figure C. 1 (Continued)


Figure C. 2 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho_{12}=0.90, \rho_{34}=0.90, n=200$.


Figure C. 2 (Continued)


Figure C. 2 (Continued)


Figure C. 3 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho_{12}=0.90, \rho_{34}=0.90, n=500$.


Figure C. 3 (Continued)


Figure C. 3 (Continued)


Figure C. 4 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho_{12}=0.90, \rho_{34}=0.90, n=1000$.


Figure C. 4 (Continued)


Figure C. 4 (Continued)


Figure C. 5 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.90, n=100$.


Figure C. 5 (Continued)


Figure C. 5 (Continued)


Figure C. 6 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.90, n=200$.


Figure C. 6 (Continued)


Figure C. 6 (Continued)


Figure C. 7 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.90, n=500$.


Figure C. 7 (Continued)


Figure C. 7 (Continued)


Figure C. 8 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.90, n=1000$.


Figure C. 8 (Continued)


Figure C. 8 (Continued)


Figure C. 9 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.99, n=100$.


Figure C. 9 (Continued)


Figure C. 9 (Continued)


Figure C. 10 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.99, n=200$.


Figure C. 10 (Continued)


Figure C. 10 (Continued)


Figure C. 11 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.99, n=500$.


Figure C. 11 (Continued)


Figure C. 11 (Continued)


Figure C. 12 Distribution of Ridge Parameter for $\rho_{12}=0.99, \rho_{34}=0.99, n=1000$.


Figure C. 12 (Continued)


Figure C. 12 (Continued)

## Appendix D

## The Lee Cancer Remission Dataset

The data (Lee, 1974) consist of patient characteristics and feature of cancer remission. The binary response is the cancer remission indicator variable with a value of 1 if the patient received a complete cancer remission and a value of 0 otherwise. The other variables are the risk factors which thought to involve to cancer remission: cellularity of the morrow clot section (CELL), Smear differential percentage of blasts (SMEAR), percentage of absolute morrow leukemia cell infiltrate (INFIL), percentage labeling index of the bone marrow leukemia cells (LI), and the highest temperature prior to star of treatment (TEMP).

Table D. 1 The Lee Cancer remission dataset

| Obs | Y | CELL | SMEAR | INFIL | LI | TEMP |
| :---: | :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| 1 | 1 | 0.8 | 0.83 | 0.66 | 1.9 | 0.996 |
| 2 | 1 | 0.9 | 0.36 | 0.32 | 1.4 | 0.992 |
| 3 | 0 | 0.8 | 0.88 | 0.7 | 0.8 | 0.982 |
| 4 | 0 | 1 | 0.87 | 0.87 | 0.7 | 0.986 |
| 5 | 1 | 0.9 | 0.75 | 0.68 | 1.3 | 0.98 |
| 6 | 0 | 1 | 0.65 | 0.65 | 0.6 | 0.982 |
| 7 | 1 | 0.95 | 0.97 | 0.92 | 1 | 0.992 |
| 8 | 0 | 0.95 | 0.87 | 0.83 | 1.9 | 1.02 |
| 9 | 0 | 1 | 0.45 | 0.45 | 0.8 | 0.999 |
| 10 | 0 | 0.95 | 0.36 | 0.34 | 0.5 | 1.038 |
| 11 | 0 | 0.85 | 0.39 | 0.33 | 0.7 | 0.988 |
| 12 | 0 | 0.7 | 0.76 | 0.53 | 1.2 | 0.982 |
| 13 | 0 | 0.8 | 0.46 | 0.37 | 0.4 | 1.006 |
| 14 | 0 | 0.2 | 0.39 | 0.08 | 0.8 | 0.99 |
| 15 | 0 | 1 | 0.9 | 0.9 | 1.1 | 0.99 |
| 16 | 1 | 1 | 0.84 | 0.84 | 1.9 | 1.02 |
| 17 | 0 | 0.65 | 0.42 | 0.27 | 0.5 | 1.014 |
| 18 | 0 | 1 | 0.75 | 0.75 | 1 | 1.004 |
| 19 | 0 | 0.5 | 0.44 | 0.22 | 0.6 | 0.99 |
| 20 | 1 | 1 | 0.63 | 0.63 | 1.1 | 0.986 |
| 21 | 0 | 1 | 0.33 | 0.33 | 0.4 | 1.01 |
| 22 | 0 | 0.9 | 0.93 | 0.84 | 0.6 | 1.02 |
| 23 | 1 | 1 | 0.58 | 0.58 | 1 | 1.002 |

Table D. 2 (Continued)

| Obs | Y | CELL | SMEAR | INFIL | LI | TEMP |
| :---: | :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| 24 | 0 | 0.95 | 0.32 | 0.3 | 1.6 | 0.988 |
| 25 | 1 | 1 | 0.6 | 0.6 | 1.7 | 0.99 |
| 26 | 1 | 1 | 0.69 | 0.69 | 0.9 | 0.986 |
| 27 | 0 | 1 | 0.73 | 0.73 | 0.7 | 0.986 |

## BIOGRAPHY

NAME<br>ACADEMIC BACKGROUND<br>\section*{PRESENT POSITION}<br>Miss Piyada Phrueksawatnon<br>Bachelor's Degree with a major in Mathematics from Naresuan University, Thailand in 2003 and Master’s Degree Applied Statistics from Chiang Mai University, Thailand in 2005.<br>Lecturer, School of Science and<br>Technology, University of Phayao, Phayao Province, Thailand


[^0]:    Tables
    Page

